

# What the Heart Wants

by agdoll95

Category: How to Train Your Dragon

Genre: Hurt-Comfort, Romance

Language: English

Characters: Hiccup, Toothless

Status: Completed

Published: 2013-08-16 16:13:42

Updated: 2014-03-11 14:52:40

Packaged: 2016-04-26 16:03:10

Rating: T

Chapters: 77

Words: 74,715

Publisher: [www.fanfiction.net](http://www.fanfiction.net)

Summary: Toothless has been alone for years and the solitude has made him bitter. So what happens when he meets Hiccup and turns her life around by turning her into a Night Fury? Hiccup can't go home and Toothless is starting to regret his actions when he falls in love. Will Hiccup accept it or will she push him away?

## 1. Chapter 1

**\*\*Atkiate, here is the other story where Hiccup becomes a Night Fury and they fall in love. This is the first chapter before I write another, just to see what you think.\*\***

### Chapter 1

I was out on another raid for the monster we called our leader. It made my blood boil knowing that we had been at the service of a creature who didn't even deserve to be called a dragon. It had been three hundred years and no one has bothered to stand up. While I would have done it myself, I also know that doing so on my own would be suicide. There is a difference between being a coward and fighting smart and me, I choose to fight smart. So until others develop the scales to fight back, I have to grit my teeth and bare it.

It was a beautiful clear night just before dawn. It was on nights like this that I wish that my mate was still alive. She was the most beautiful Dark One, but she was also the last female. She died protecting me, and now, I was all that was left of the Dark Ones. It has been that way for two hundred years. My bitterness grew with not only the monster on our island, but also the humans whom we had to raid to feed that beast. The beast may be the cause of our problems, but the humans were killing us off one by one raid after raid. It was because of them that my mate was gone.

I flew over the island for a few minutes and finally decided to join in the raid. I zoomed in and aimed for one of their launching

contraptions and blasted it to rubble. As I flew past, I could hear the humans yelling at one another to jump. I basted it again to make sure to finish it. As it fell apart, I saw another on not far away and decided to get rid of that one too. I flew in close and blasted it.

When I flew past, I felt something wrap itself around me and I could no longer keep myself airborne. I screeched as I fell to the earth and smashed into a tree, snapping it in half and skidding across the ground. I finally came to a stop when I flew over a set of boulders thank the Great Dragons that I didn't hit them. My vision started to blur as the consciousness started to leave me, but I fought to keep my eyes open. But it was no use, in a matter of minutes, I closed my eyes and fell into uneasy unconscious state.

\_I was flying with another Dark One. She was so beautiful, with hues of violet in her scales and the most beautiful emerald eyes. She smiled at me and it was like I couldn't help but smile back. All I could feel while flying with her was over-whelming peace, security, and comfort. I this sense that I never wanted anything to happen to her, but I couldn't figure out why. All I knew was that moment, I never wanted the flight to end.\_

I was shaken from my unconscious state when I felt something on my leg and a voice. I shook it off and let a growl. I could hear whatever it was inch closer, hesitantly. I opened my eyes and saw that it was a young human female. She had one of the weapons the humans used to kill us and though small as it was it could still finish me. I wasn't going to let her be the one to finish me. I used whatever strength I could to break the ropes that held me and pinned her to the boulder behind her.

As I looked into her eyes, something felt familiar about them. I could see something else, fear. I never knew that humans were capable of such emotions cause of the way they slaughtered us without hesitation. Then my thoughts rolled back to the way she approached me. Her hesitant steps, the look of reconsideration she had as she held the knife before I broke loose. Could she have been just as terrified as I had been? Ultimately, I decided to let her live, but not go unpunished.

I focused all my energy and guided it to her body. As I felt the energy leave, I could feel the human's breathing begin to quicken. I screech in to her ears and flew off, thanking the Great Dragons that I hadn't lost a wing.

'I will return soon, human.' I thought as I flew back to the nest.

## 2. Chapter 2

### Chapter 2

I watched as the Night Fury flew away. I was still breathing so hard, I thought my lungs would burst and my heart was beating so fast I was afraid it would give out. I let out a sigh of relief and got to my feet to see the Night Fury fly passed Thor's beach. I turned to go back home but my head started to spin and my legs felt wobbly. Finally they gave out and I passed out right there on the ground in

the middle of the forest.

\_I felt the wind blowing across my face and under my body. I turned my head and saw that I was flying along-side the Night Fury, but for some reason, I wasn't afraid of it anymore. In fact what I felt as I flew by it was peace and comfort. I never want it to end.\_

I opened my eyes and got up slowly. I picked up my knife and started for home. When I looked at the sky as I walked I noticed that I only could have been out for only a few minutes. When I made it back to the village, I went down to the docks to talk to my Dad about what happened. I saw that he was talking to some of the men returning from another search for the dragons nest. I could hear them talking.

"Continue the search." My Dad ordered.

"With what? We're not just low on ships Stoick, we're low on men." Hoark reminded him.

"Then pull from the defenses."

"And leave the village unprotected?"

"We'll train new recruits. This is a crisis. We need all hands." My Dad said ending the argument.

"All hands?" Hoark said looking up at me.

My looked up too and he saw that I had been listening. He knew I had heard everything, and what I must have been feeling.

I turned and started heading towards the forge, deciding to tell him later. When I go there, I slipped into my apron and work gloves then pulled my hair back.

Gobber saw me come in. "Where have you been lass?"

"I went for a walk just to clear my head about some things." I said dully. "Then I went down to talk to my Dad at the docks."

"I see."

"My Dad was talking about me with one of the other men."

Gobber sized up the meaning instantly as I got to work at the pump warming the fire pit. I then pulled the molten iron out of the pit and poured it into the cast. I dropped the melting bowl into the bucket of water and ran to help Gobber finish the sword.

"Don't take it to heart kid." Gobber said comfortingly or lack thereof. "It's his job to be tough on everyone."

"I'm not everyone. But it doesn't even matter." I sighed. "The guy's impossible to please." I said running over to the anvil. "If I didn't live in the same house as him I'd never even know he was my father."

"Have you told him that?" Gobber asked slamming the sword down.

"Of course not we barely even make eye contact." I answered switching out his club hand with his melding hammer. "And we do it's always with this disappointed scowl like someone skimped on the meat in his sandwich. 'Excuse me barmaid. I'm afraid you brought the wrong offspring. I ordered an extra-large boy with beefy arms, extra guts and glory on the side. This here, this is a talking fish bone.'"

"Now you're thinking about this all wrong. It's not so much what you look like, it's what inside that he can't stand." Gobber said laughing.

"Thank you for summing that up." I said sarcastically.

"No I mean there's the Viking way and then there's your way and your way makes grown men uncomfortable."

"Speaking of uncomfortable, I'd like a new conversation please."

"Alright, how's it going with the guys." He said wooingly.

"Oh yeah way to get the mood back on track." I said sarcastically again.

"Oh come on. I've seen the way you look at Fishlegs."

"Please, Fishlegs would come near me even if he was on fire and I had the only bucket of water in town."

"Hey, can I get this fixed." I heard Fishlegs ask from the door.

"Hi Fishlegs, What can I, I mean we do forâ€¦" I asked unable to finish my question as he laid his hammer down on the table.

"My, uh, lovely apprentice here will service all your needs." Gobber said shoving me towards Fishlegs. "I have to go get, uh, yeah I'm just going to go outside." He said walking away humming.

"Gobber. What can you do right?" I said laughing lightly. "So what can I do for you?" I said brushing my bangs out of my face.

"My hammer keeps swinging too far to the left even when I try to swing it right." He said handing it to me.

I struggled to keep it up, but I hauled to my work desk to check it out. "Okay, let's see what I can do here." I said trying to sound professional. "So I saw guys out on fire patrol last night, you guys were awesome." I said undoing the nut and loop that held the hammer together.

"Yeah, but Astrid said that she was disappointed that she didn't get burned." Fishlegs said probably feeling just as awkward as I was.

"That's Astrid for you. You know she's not having fun unless she gets a scar out of it." I said laughing pulled the handle out of place. "Well here's the problem, this handle is old, shot."

"How old is it?"

"Old enough that I can do this." I said breaking it against my leg. "The only thing it would be good for at this point is fire wood." I explained tossing it into the fire pit. "What you need is a new handle. I'll see what I have." I said going to check the handles we had in storage.

As I looked through them, I would turn my head every few seconds to see Fishlegs Staring at me. I finally found what I was looking for. "Feel this." I said holding out the best handle we had.

"What is this?" Fishlegs asked in awe at how strong it felt.

"What you are feeling is the only handle on the island made of the strongest wood known, mahogany." I explained feeling pretty good about this. I was sure he was impressed with this. "With a handle like this, I guarantee that the next time the handle has to be changed, this hammer will belong to your great-great grandchildren."

"That is so cool." Fishlegs said sounding very impressed.

"Yeah, yeah it is." I said feeling my heart start to race.

"Where did you get that?"

"I got it from Trader Johann. Traded a few spy glasses, battle axe sets for a supply. I had enough left over and made it into this handle."

"Wow. Trader Johann always has the coolest stuff for trade doesn't he?"

"Yes he does." I said starting to get the handle through the notch.

I heard the curtain to my private workshop open. "No you're not supposed to beâ€¦"

"What is all this?" Fishlegs asked in awe.

"That? That's nothing, just some ideas for this project I'm working on." I said feeling totally embarrassed. "Kind of confidential, upper level development, not really supposed to talk about it stuff."

"The mutilater?"

"Yeah. Basically it used twin weighted counter levers the swing crisscrossing blades in four different directions." I explained finishing the hammer.

"How do you hold it?" He asked coming out of my work shop.

"You don't, you, you shoot it." I answered quietly.

"Sounds pretty cool. I'd like to see it when it's done."

"You would?"

"Yeah. Is my hammer done?"

"Oh, yeah, yeah here." I said quickly handing it to him. For some reason, it didn't feel as heavy as it did before, but at the time, I really didn't care.

"Whoa, it feels so much lighter now." Fishlegs exclaimed flabbergasted.

"Yeah. You see, your weapon is supposed to be an extension of yourself. With your hammer" I started to explain standing behind him, taking his hand in mine, guiding it with each swing. "...you should be able to swing it freely. Smooth, fluid strokes." I explained feeling a heavy blush across my face.

When I let go, I could see Fishlegs had the same on his face. "Hey Fishlegs, you coming to practice or what?" my cousin Snotlout called.

Fishlegs turned to leave. "So I'll see you around?"

"Yeah, I guess you will." I said finding myself lost for words.

When he was gone I got back to work finishing the sword. As I finished and placed it on the rack, my head started to pound. It felt someone was hammering down on my head. I tried to sit down to rest but my vision started to go black. I started for the door to go for help, but I lost my strand of consciousness before I could even take a step.

### 3. Chapter 3

#### Chapter 3

When I opened my eyes, my entire body ached. I lifted my head and for some reason, my eyes were seeing everything clear as day. As I got out of bed I felt a little clumsier than usual and my moves felt heavier.

My Dad came up the stairs and looked at me with pure shock. "Dad, are you okay?" I asked.

All of a sudden, he drew his sword and lunged at me. "Dad! What are you doing! It's me!" I screamed. He moved at me again.

I could see that he wasn't listening and I knew that if I didn't get out he was going to kill me. I looked around my room for anyway I could get out. I looked up and saw my window above my bed. As my Dad made another move at me, I lunged out of the way and jumped out the window. At this point, I just didn't want to see my Dad right now. I just wanted some time alone to think so I ran into the woods.

As I tried to run, I kept tripping over my feet. I tried to stand up but every time I got up on two legs, I couldn't walk right. I was getting more and more worried about what was wrong with me. I trudged to the nearest river and looked at my reflection. What I saw next made me hope to the gods that I was just having a nightmare.

I was a Night Fury. My eyes were a shocking emerald green, my body was covered in black scales with violet hues in the way the moon

light touched them, my ears were long and semi-pointed, my teeth were short and sharp, and on my back I could see two long dark wings. I looked down at my feet, and saw strong dark claws.

"This isn't happening, this can't be happening." I kept rant and eventually screaming at myself. I closed my eyes and kept urging myself to wake up, but no matter how many times I opened and closed my eyes, nothing changed. It was all too real.

"Please for the love of Thor, let this be a dream." I began to cry, my eyes filling with tears.

After stumbling in the woods for a couple hours, I finally figured the use of my legs and ran for a place to think. But unfortunately, I wasn't paying attention and lost my footing at the edge of a cove and fell in. The landing didn't hurt too badly but what was I going to do now? I didn't know how to fly, I barely even knew how to walk in this new body, and the walls were too steep and slippery from all the rain for me to climb out.

It was official, I was not going anywhere and any minute now my Dad and some of the other villagers were going to be out looking for me to kill me. Then I remembered that my Dad was planning a fleet to go look for the dragon's nest. Hopefully, I would have a little more time to figure something out.

I looked up at the sky and saw that dawn was nearly here. I decided to rest for a little while and try to save my strength. I found a spot under a ledge completely overtaken by tree roots. I crawled under the ledge and settled down. I had a hard time closing my eyes. Too many thoughts were running through my head.

'How did this happen? Was this because of the Night Fury I shot down? Are the gods punishing me for it? How am I supposed to change back? Will I ever change back? Will I ever see my Dad, Gobber, Fishlegs, or any of the people I loved ever again. Yeah, most of them pretty much pushed me around or avoided me all together but still they're the people I care about most and I would give anything to change back, to go home and pretend that this never happened.'

These thoughts and more raced through my mind, but my eyes eventually got heavy and I fell asleep.

#### 4. Chapter 4

##### Chapter 4

I had finally managed to sneak out of the nest to return to the humans' island. Thank the Great Dragons that the beast was resting and didn't pay attention when I left. As I flew over the ocean, I kept wondering if the human had changed by now and what she would look like. As I flew over the village across the early brightening sky, I started to wonder where she was. Her scent wasn't near the village and I couldn't stay in the sky or the humans would see me.

I landed in the forest and continued on foot. As I sniffed around for the human's scent, I started to notice that her scent had started to change to the darker, hotter scent of a Dark One. I knew then that the change had happened and she was somewhere on this island. I

couldn't wait to see her.

I caught myself wondering why I was so eager to see her. She shot me down and threatened to kill me. This was her punishment, so why was I so eager to see her?

I continued deeper into the forest and came across a beautiful cove. As I looked around, I picked up the smell of blood. I took a leap into the cove and the smell got stronger. She was down here. I started to look around wondering where she could be hiding. I left nothing to chance, I looked every little detail everywhere to find her.

Her scent got stronger under a ledge covered by tree roots. I walked under the ledge and saw her for the first time since I left her to change. As I looked at her, something seemed familiar about her. A ray of sunlight passed through the root and I saw the light touch her scales and that was when I noticed the hues of violet. Realization came on top of me like a boulder falling over a mountain-side.

She was the Dark One from my dream. She was the one who was supposed to fly with me. I couldn't believe it, this human who had tried to kill me, I was supposed to become friends with her? How could I befriend someone who tried to kill me?

But then I remembered why I allowed her to live and change into a Dark One in the first place. I remembered the hesitation I had seen in her eyes before I broke loose and the fear I had seen after I pinned her. I had spared her life because I felt curious. I wondered how someone who had probably slaughtered hundreds of my kind could feel such emotions let alone hesitate to kill to me. But I had changed her to punish her for shooting me down.

As these thoughts played in my mind, the newly changed Dark One began to stir. I stepped back to make sure she wouldn't be able to try anything when she was awake.

When she opened her eyes and looked at me, she jumped back and pushed herself back against the ledge wall. The look in her eyes showed complete fear again.

"I told you I would be back." I said looking at her and still in wonder about how she could feel fear.

"You can talk?" she gasped.

"Of course I can, just as you can."

"But you never said anything before."

"Let me rephrase, you can talk just as I can. You are talking like me, not the other way around."

"What no, I am human, I can't talk to dragons." She said sounding like she was starting to panic.

"Perhaps you haven't seen your reflection yet, but you are no longer a human. You are a Dark One like me. One of the last." I explained stepping closer. "Go look in the water, you'll see."



She looked at me hesitantly and slowly made her way to the small lake in the middle of the cove. As she looked into the water, she hung her head.

"So it really wasn't a dream after all. I really have become a Night Fury." She said sounding like she was going to cry.

Humans couldn't cry, could they? I stepped closer and saw that her eyes were shining and wet with tears.

"Why are you crying?" I asked.

"Because, now I have lost everything. I can't go home to my father, my mentor, my friends. If I do, they'll never know it's me and they'll kill me. My own father didn't even recognize me. He practically chased out of our house and is wondering where I am and what has happened to me." She replied with a voice sounding like she fighting the tears.

"Let me rephrase again, how are you crying? Humans can't cry." I asked again.

"Of course humans can cry. We just try not to because a lot of us believe crying to be a sign of weakness. Me, I believe it be a sign that there is emotion in us, though, I'm pretty sure I am the only one who thinks that way." she said wiping her tears away. "Why am I talking to you like this? You did this to me why? Why would you take everything from me?" she said jumping away.

"I changed you because I was curious, you were the only human I have ever seen who has shown any emotion, but also to punish you for what you did to me." I explained sitting up on my hunches.

"What did I do to you?" she cried stepping farther back.

"You shot my down and threatened to kill me. I wanted you to see how it felt to be hunted and hated. Also, I wanted to learn. Learn how is it that humans are capable of emotion when they slaughter so many and why you were so hesitant when you could have killed me so easily. I understand that you think that it is no excuse for me changing you into a Dark One but I didn't know any other way."

"Dark One? You mean Night Fury." She said curiously.

"No Dark One. Night Fury may be what humans call us, but among dragons we are known as Dark Ones." I explained. "Now come, we must leave the island before the humans find us here."

"You mean fly?" she asked nervously.

"How else would we get off the island?"

"I can't. I don't know how to fly." She replied as if ashamed of that.

"I should have figured that. You have only been a Dark One for a few hours so of course you wouldn't know how." The female shot me an 'excuse me' look. "So I'll teach you."

## 5. Chapter 5

### Chapter 5

It was official this was the weirdest and worst day of my life. First I find out that I have been turned into a Night Fury, then I find out that the one who did it, did it because he was curious and angry, now, I learn that if I want to get off the island to avoid being killed I have to learn to fly. As if my life hadn't been rough enough. Now everything I knew was about to change and I could never go back.

The Night Fury got me started right away although it was kind of embarrassing that he had to see me still learning how to walk.

"I suppose I should start by teaching you how to use your body first. I see you are still having trouble using your legs." He said looking down at me.

"I have trying to get use to my body since I found out that I was a Nighâ€ Dark One." I stammered.

"Cause when I found you, you were sleeping."

"I had spent hours in the forest trying to get away from my father who tried to kill me." I argued.

"No excuse. Let's get started." He said taking control. "I suppose we will start from the beginning. First, you must trust your body to support you as you move, do not second guess yourself because that is where you will stumble and or fall and get hurt."

"How am I supposed to 'trust' my body if I can't even stand up without losing balance?" I asked feeling embarrassed having to be taught how to walk again like a two year old.

"By not thinking about what you want your body to and just doing it. If you lose yourself in the movement it will soon become second nature to you. Trust your body to know what to do, not your mind. The mind plays tricks." He explained getting up and showing me how to walk.

I stood up fine, but every time I tried to take a step, I wobbled and almost always ell over. Weight kept shifting with each step. It took me several hours and like a million stumbles and falls before I could walk without feeling like I was going to fall. It didn't feel so wrong for me to feel my weight shifting with each step. It didn't feel so heavy or hampered anymore. And surprisingly, the Night Fury wasn't a bad teacher. He did raise his voice a few times, but he was patient and pointed me in the right direction if I made a mistake.

That's more than my Dad or Gobber did for me. My Dad just looked at me like I would never get it right and Gobber believed in 'learning on the job'. I speak from experience when I say that it is not always a good idea to learn on the job. I cannot even remember how many times I got burned when I was first learning to work with Gobber in the forge.

The Night Fury's voice shook me from my thoughts. "Is something

bothering you? You have not spoken for a while." He asked standing next to me.

"It's nothing. It's just that you have been one of the only one who has taught me anything and not looked at like I'm a mistake or told me I had to learn on my own. That's more than anyone has ever done for me. So I wanted to say Thank you." I said looking him in the eye with sincerity

"There is nothing to thank me for. I am only doing what is necessary to get us off the island alive. While your gratitude is appreciated, it is not necessary." He said looking away. "But your welcome." He said looking back with his own gratitude.

I didn't know why at the time, but for some reason I thought I saw something changing in his eyes. When I first saw those eyes, they were full of anger and yet a faint trace of curiosity. Now I some part of me was seeing pain and understanding. And another part was feeling like we had more in common than either one of us knew about each other.

## 6. Chapter 6

### Chapter 6

The female proved to be an exceptional student. As we walked through the lessons I noticed that she was a hands on learner. And a fast one at that. I never admitted to her but I was impressed.

We continued the lessons until I saw that she walking in her new body as if she were born that way. I could not believe how fast she learned everything I had to teach her. At the rate she was going, we would be off the island in maybe three days.

At the end of the day, she asked something no one has ever asked me before.

"What is your name?" she asked as we were settling down for the night.

"Excuse me?"

"It's just you haven't told me your name yet and I just think that maybe it would put us on better terms of communication if we knew what to call each other." She explained.

"I don't have one. Dragons haven't had names for centuries. The last dragon to have a name was my father and he died three hundred years ago at a young age." I explained settling down on my bed of cinders.

"How old was your father?" she asked her brimming with curiosity.

"He was only five hundred years old. Too young to die and too young to leave me and my mother to fend for ourselves." I replied bitterness creeping into my voice.

"I am so sorry."

"Don't be. I wasn't your fault, you were never there. He died protecting me and mother. We begged him to escape with his but he insisted that he had to stay and fight to keep us safe. By the time we even came close to the opening in the nest, it was too late, we were trapped. So my father's sacrifice was for nothing. If I had the chance again I would have forced him to come with us." He explained. I could feel the bitterness growing stronger.

"Why were trying to escape your nest? What happened?"

"Our home was invaded by a monster who was forcing our kind to hunt for it or we would become the hunted. If none of us brought any food back, we would become the food. After it took over our home, every one lost their significance. No one was ever called by name again."

"What were your parents' names?" she asked with heavy sympathy in her voice.

"Keir and Keena." I replied feeling the bitterness I felt before fading.

"Dark and Bravery. Those are beautiful names." The female said in a calming voice that made my bitterness fade away completely.

It felt strange to me. I had been willing to tear everything away from this female to punish her for what she had done to me and here she was comforting me and showing me sympathy for everything in my past. Just hearing her sent this warm wave through me and made me wonder, what was she up to.

"Why are asking me these questions? What are you up to?" I asked thinking that she was trying pull something and was trying to learn my past to use against me.

"Nothing. I just want to know what I should call you. And I wanted to tell you my name so you know what to call me." She said calm but defensive.

"No, I mean are you trying to trick me? Are you not angry about what I have done to you?" I asked thinking that this was part of her plan.

"No. I understand why you did what you did. And I am a little hurt but there is nothing that I can do about it. All I can do is get through it and learn how to live as I am. That is how it has been for me my entire life. If I can't change it, then all I can do is get over or through it. I am sorry for what I did to you and if I could have the chance again, I would have just stayed in the forge like Gobber told me. I am sorry." She explained with her eyes shining.

"How can you just accept this? I took everything from you and here you are acting as if nothing has changed." I asked stunned to see that she was just letting this happen to her.

"Like I said, I have to deal with things like this my whole life. If I could do anything to change it, I just had to learn to deal with it." She explained.

"Why do pretend? I can see that this hurts you yet you act as if it doesn't affect you. Why?" I pushed.

"I've had to. Ever since I lost my mother, I have had to hide all my pain because if I show it or act on it, I get in trouble or I end up hurting someone. So I have to just keep my feeling to myself and hide my emotions to keep myself from getting in trouble."

"That is no reason to hide how you really feel about things. Emotions are give us drive, reasons to go on to fight for what we want, what we are and what we believe. To hide them is a crime in its self."

"All my life I have been afraid to show my emotions because I was afraid of hurting the people I love. Have you ever had so much emotion built up inside you that you afraid to let it out all at once?" she asked as I saw tears starting to pool in her eyes.

"Yes. But holding it in is not a good thing. It can cause severe health implications. That is why you must let it out. If you are ashamed, don't be, all dragons are there to support other dragons in emotional turmoil. We are a very big family. We are there for each other. Just let it, I can see you are fighting to keep it in right now." I urged.

As if she was expecting me to say that, she burst into tears and leaned her head on my shoulder. I felt the impulse to pull away, but something told me she needed me. So I remained where I was. As she cried, I felt the same wave of warmth I felt earlier as she was asking about my family. Why did feel this way?

## 7. Chapter 7

### Chapter 7

Now I understood why the Night Fury said that I shouldn't hold my emotions in. It felt good to let it all out. I cried until I was sure that all my tears had dried up.

When I lifted my head, the Night Fury finally spoke again. "See how much better it is to let it out instead of holding it all in?" he asked looking down at me while I wiped my eyes.

"Yeah it feels kind of good. I haven't cried so much since the night my mother was murdered."

"Your mother was a murdered? What happened?" He asked looking at me with surprise.

"This other tribe invaded our home and she died trying to protect me. The last thing she said to me was, 'You'll always be in my heart.' The same thing she would sing for me when she would sing to me at night. I was only six years old. To make things worse, ever since she died, my Dad has looked at me like a disappointment. Sometimes I think he blames me for my mother's death." I explained feeling a huge weight being lifted off my shoulders.

"My mother died protected me too. The death of someone you love is

something that takes its toll on all those loved by that loved one." He said with understanding in his voice.

"How did you get over it?" I asked.

"One gets over the loss of a claw or a tooth. But the death of a loved is something you don't ever get over. You can only get through it." He said putting his wing over me.

"Thank you." I said rubbing my head against his neck.

After a few seconds he pulled away. "Don't read too much into this. I am still angry about what you did."

"Now it is my turn to ask why you pretend? You ask say you are angry at me about shooting you down and yet you ask me about my past and advise me about how to handle my pains and emotions. Why do act like you hate me?" I pushed.

"You're right, what I have done is hypocritical. I act like I hate you because I didn't want you to know that this whole day while I was training you, you have reminded me of my mate. I didn't want you to know because I didn't want you to think that I was falling in love with because you remind me of her." I could sense that he was embarrassed to tell me this. Now it was my turn.

"I understand. Now it's my turn to tell you how I feel. I have grown to care about you too. But it's because you have given me what I have always wanted. You haven't given up on me. While we were training, you didn't give up when I messed up. No one has ever done that for me. Except Fishlegs. He was the only other person who could talk me without teasing me or looked at me like I was a disappointment. I want to thank you for that."

When I was done explaining, the look in his eyes told me he had been in my place before. Alone and just wanting to feel like we had someone to love and who loved us back.

## 8. Chapter 8

### Chapter 8

We continued to talk for a couple more hours and the female started to yawn. I could see her eyes were getting heavy.

"Perhaps you should get some rest. We start training again first thing in the morning." I explained.

"Wait, if you don't have a name, maybe I could give you one?" She asked timidly.

I thought about it for a moment. It would be nice to have a name, but no dragon has had a name since the monster invaded our home, and I was afraid that the name would change me. But this female was not afraid, so maybe, I shouldn't be afraid either.

"I'd love that." I responded softly.

"Uh, how about Toothless?"

"What? Why of things did you think of that?" I asked flabbergasted at her choice of names.

"I noticed how your teeth go in and out, I thought it would be a fun play of names if you were called something to match." She explained with a tired grin. "If you don't like it, I can change it."

"No, I like Toothless. Toothless is fine." I said settling down. "I suppose you have a name?" I asked.

"My names Hiccup. It's not the best name, but it's not the worst either. It's not one I would have chosen, but it wasn't really my choice. So I guess, I just have to live with it." She said yawning and falling asleep.

I watched as she slept and laid my head down for a few minutes, thinking about what this female—what Hiccup had just done for me. She had, after all these years, given me a name. As ridiculous as it was, it was still my name. Now I knew her name, and it wasn't as silly as mine, but still she seemed to accept that it was her name and no one else's. Just like the name she gave me was mine and mine alone. I was happier than I had been in a long time.

Slowly my eyes began to close. As I drifted off, I thought about what the female had told me, how she lost her mother, how she had no one to turn to and how she has hide her emotions for so long. I began to wonder, maybe she and I have more in common than I thought and maybe she knew this too.

\_I was flying over the crater in our nest with Hiccup close behind me. She was close and seemed terrified to be here.\_

\_"Just stay with me. I won't let anything happen to you." I promised.\_

\_"I trust you." She said looking up at me. The look in her eyes told me she was still afraid, but she trusted me to enough to believe that I would protect her.\_

\_We flew over and hid behind a stalagmite. We watched as the others dropped the food they had gathered and flew over to their hollows. The last to deliver was a Bulbous One. He dropped a small fish and tried to fly.\_

\_"IS THAT ALL YOU HAVE GATHERED FOR ME! ALL THIS TIME AND ALL YOU GIVE ME IS THIS!" He shouted from below.\_

\_His head rose up out of the red smoke and his jaws closed around the Bulbous One. I felt Hiccup shudder beside me.\_

\_"What is that?" she asked her voice shaking.\_

\_"That is the monster." I said bitterness dripping in my voice as the monster disappeared back down into the red smoke.\_

\_Its head returned. "I see you brought no food either Dark Ones, so now, you will join the Bulbous One!" he shouted as he made a move for us.\_

\_"Toothless, help!" I heard Hiccup shriek. I turned around and I saw that that beast had his jaws around her tail.\_

\_I dove in after them and pulled to get her free. The last thing I saw was Hiccup and I flying out of the nest with her bleeding and her flight slowing dangerously down.\_

I woke with a start. I looked at where Hiccup was sleeping and saw that she was still safe and unharmed. I heaved a sigh of relief. I didn't know why, but I suddenly felt that, this female was all that mattered to me now. I didn't know why, but I wasn't in the right state of mind to question it. I just laid back down and fell back to sleep.

\_"You feel this way because you love her. You have grown attached to her and you have found your new treasure." I heard.\_

\_I looked around for the voice and saw that it was my mate. She was still as beautiful as the first time I saw her.\_

\_"Why did you have to go? You should have let me fight off the humans that night, not you." I asked as we hugged.\_

\_"Life is like the forest. Where one thing falls, another grows. Maybe not what was there before but something new and wonderful." She said as she hugged me tight. "That female needs you now, and whether or not you know it, you need her too." She said pulling away.\_

\_"But I miss you so much."\_

\_"I will always be with you. No matter where you go or what happens to you, I will always be with you, in here." She said nudging my heart.\_

I woke up and saw that Hiccup was already up and ready. She was up on the ledge. It looked like she was trying to practice flying without any prior teachings.

"What are you doing?" I asked as I stopped her.

"I thought that I should at least practice the easy stuff before you get into all the harder stuff you have to teach me." She explained.

"There is nothing easy about flying the first time." I said sternly pulling her down off the ledge. "There are still some things about using your body that you haven't learned yet. Come with me."

We walked around to a safe spot by the lake. I checked everything out and saw that this was the safest spot for her to practice her movements before I would teach her how to fly.

"First you must get used to the feeling of your new wings. You have only been a dragon for two days and you have yet to use your wings. So first things first, I will teach you how to use your wings." I explained opening mine.

As I explained how the wings worked and showed her how to move and control them, she seemed like she was learning faster than I did. I was a little envious, but I was also a little impressed. If this kept



up, we would be out of this cove in a few days.

## 9. Chapter 9

### Chapter 9

I watched in total awe as Toothless opened his wings. Just seeing how powerful his wings could be gave me an idea of how strong mine could be. Watching him and learning everything he was showing me made my heart pound so hard I thought that he could hear it too.

'What am I thinking? He's a dragon plus, what about Fishlegs?' I scolded myself.

But then I remembered something, I wouldn't be able to see to see Fishlegs anymore. If I went back, I would be killed. Just thinking about that made my heart go from excited about the lesson to ill from longing. I had wanted to tell Fishlegs that I liked him, but could never find the right time or the right words to say. Now I would never get that chance because now that I was a Night Fury, I could never go back and tell him, not that he would even understand me. If my Dad didn't then what were the odds that Fishlegs would? 'Slim to none.' I thought to myself.

"Are you paying attention?" Toothless scolded shaking me from my thoughts.

"I'm sorry. I was just thinking about this friend of mine from back home. I never got the chance to tell him that I liked him and now, I might never get that chance because if I went back now, I would definitely be killed. Even if I could get to him with getting my head chopped off, he wouldn't even understand me just like my Dad." I explained looking at the ground.

"It's for the better that you not find out. You are right if you do go back now you will be killed. So for now I'll make you a deal, once your training is complete, before we leave the island I'll let you say good-bye to your friend." He offered.

It still hurt that I would soon have to leave my home forever, but I knew it was for the best and it gave me some comfort to know that I would be given the chance to say good "bye to Fishlegs and Gobber.

"Okay, deal." I agreed.

"Good, now back to the lesson." He said starting again. "The reason it is so difficult the first time you tried to open your wings is because you are still in the, 'if I do this I am going to fall' state of mind. You have to learn to ignore that otherwise your wings will close and you will fall if try to fly." He explained walking over to me and helping me relax the muscles in my back and shoulders. "Just relax and pull the muscles at the base of your wings toward the center of your back and shoulders and they will open. Release them to lower them. When you are in flight, you have to do this repeatedly in order to pump your wings to keep you airborne. Now try it on your own."

I followed what he said, and it felt weird to be pulling these new

muscles that I had only had for two days, but after a few minutes, it didn't feel so abnormal anymore. Once I got the feel of it, it wasn't so hard to move them anymore. Toothless was really being an awesome teacher.

The lessons continued up until we got to how to control the tail and the fins on them. That one was proving to be the most difficult. But after a few hours and several times of smacking myself or Toothless with my tail while trying to get it to cooperate, I finally got it under control and learned how to move the fins like they had always been a part of me.

"Good. I think we should stop for the day and start the flight training tomorrow." He said starting for the ledge.

"But it's not even dusk yet. I'm ready to learn." I begged but as to kill my argument, my stomach growled and Toothless looked at me with an 'That's why' look.

"You have to eat." He finally said.

"But I don't even know how to fish yet. You haven't taught me that yet." I argued.

"That is why I will be the one who will hunt and find food and you will be staying right here until I get back." He said flying off.

"Like I have a choice." I called after him.

After he was gone, I spent the time practicing with the use of my wings and tail. If I was going to learn how to fly tomorrow, I had to be ready and my wings and tail had to be strong. By the time Toothless got back, my wings and tail were sore.

"I thought I told you we would resume training tomorrow." He scolded.

"I was just practicing for my flight lesson tomorrow. My wings and tail have to be stronger if they are going to keep my airborne aren't they?"

"Yes, but if you can't even lift them because you over work them it won't do much good will it?" he deadpanned.

I had to admit, he was right. Flight training would do much good if I couldn't even move the parts of me that mattered the most for flight.

"Okay. So where's the food." I asked.

In answer to my question, Toothless started to gag and a pile of fish came spilling out of his mouth. I started to gag too, for different reasons.

"It's okay, it's nothing to be appalled at. Just eat." He said taking a large cod in his mouth and swallowing it in two bites.

Slowly, I took a small salmon in my mouth and slower swallowed that. To my surprise it tasted better than I thought it would. I started to

take in more salmon and cod as Toothless also ate his fill. Once everything was gone, we settled down under the ledge and laid down for the night.

I had a hard time falling asleep. After a few hours of tossing and turning, I got up and went for a walk around the cove. I stopped at a certain spot by the lake and looked at my reflection in the water. It still seemed weird to be seeing everything at night clear as day. But right now, it didn't seem to bother me as much.

"Can't sleep?" a voice from behind me said. I turned around and saw it was Toothless.

"Yeah, just too much on my mind I guess." I sighed in relief.

"What is on your mind?" He asked sitting down next to me.

"I was thinking that, maybe it's for the best you did this to me. I mean, I never fit in with the other Vikings anyway and everyone treated like I was a mistake. But as a dragon, maybe I would fit in better with other dragons."

"Maybe."

All my life, all I ever wanted was for my Dad to be proud of me. But no matter how hard or what I tried he always looked at me like I was nothing but the greatest disappointment of his life."

I looked at my reflection again.

Look at me, I will never pass for a perfect warrior, or a perfect daughter. Can it be I'm not meant to play this part? Now I see that if I were truly to be myself, I would break my father's heart.

Who is that girl I see staring straight back at me? Why is my reflection someone I don't know? Somehow I cannot hide who I am though I've tried. When will my reflection show who I am inside? When will my reflection show who I am inside?

I sang sadly. When the song ended, Toothless put his wing around me.

"I can already see who you really are. You don't have to try to be one of them. You are who you choose to be." He said comfortingly.

"Thanks Toothless." I said nudging my head against his.

"How about we go back to sleep now. We have a long day of training in the morning." He suggested.

"Sure." I said getting up and following him back to the ledge.

I laid back down and I finally got to sleep.

## 10. Chapter 10

### Chapter 10

When I opened my eyes, I saw Hiccup was still asleep. That wouldn't have bothered me if it weren't for where she was sleeping.

Her head was pressed against my side and the rest of her was curled up tight against me. I stood up and walked briskly away. I shook off the feeling of awkwardness and walked toward the lake. I dipped my head into the water and shook off the last remains of drowsiness. I looked back and saw that Hiccup was still asleep.

I decided to let her sleep a little longer and went out to hunt. As I was diving in and out of the ocean I could feel a hot flash brush across my face. It felt so strange, I had experienced anything like it since I first met and first mate. Then something crossed my mind, was I falling in love with Hiccup?

'No that can't be. I have only known her for three days. There is no way that I could have feelings for her.' I shouted in my mind.

But then what my mate said to me the other night came to mind. \_"You feel this way because you love her. You have grown attached to her and you have found your new treasure."\_

I had known her to never lie. So maybe I was falling in love with Hiccup, but why was I falling in love with someone I had only known for a few days, someone who had shot me down and I had decided to punish for it.

As these questions ran around my head, I flew back toward the cove. When I got there, I was tackled to the ground. After I could catch my breath, I felt someone rubbing their face against mine. I looked and saw that it was Hiccup.

"What are you doing?" I asked in shock.

"She looked at me and jumped back. "I thought you were gone, that you had left me. I was just so happy to see you back." She replied with tears in her eyes.

"Is your faith in me really that little? How could I leave you here when you and I may be the last Dark Ones in existence? No, until you can fly and take care of yourself, I'm staying with you. Whether you like it or not." I replied hoping my statement would cover up my growing feelings for her.

She looked at me and smiled. I knew why, but I didn't respond. I just dropped the fish I was carrying and we ate until it was time for us to resume her training.

She proved to be better at it than either one of us thought. Once she got the feel of her wings, it was like everything feel into place. Got the hang everything, right down to the correct tail and wing formations. Again I felt a little envious, but proud of her. I hadn't felt this way since my mate first said she would be mine.

By night fall, we were practicing advanced aerial combat without the use of fire. I hadn't taught this yet because I wanted to wait until we were off the island for her to breathe fire. At one point she lost focus and fell out of the sky into the forest. I banked down and followed her. When I found her, she looked like she had taken a pretty bad fall. Though she didn't have any serious injuries. As I

looked her over, I noticed she had a large cut on her side. I pressed my paw against the wound and focused my magic to it. Within moments the wound was gone and Hiccup was awake.

"I'm sorry. I just got lost in thought and lost control there for a second." She apologized when she was back on her feet.

"You can't lose focus while in the air, not even for a second, because that is when you make mistakes and you will fall." I scolded. "Come on, let's go back to the cove. We leave here first thing in the morning."

## 11. Chapter 11

### Chapter 11

I had a hard time falling asleep. Toothless fell asleep without any problems, I on the other hand just couldn't get my eyes to close. My thoughts kept drifting back to my family and all the people I cared about. All the ones I'd be leaving behind. Then I remembered how my Dad looked at me when he chased me out of our house. Did he even recognize me, or did he just see a Night Fury in my room and that was all the excuse he needed to kill me?

These questions rattled in my head. I finally couldn't take it anymore. I got up and walked a short distance away from Toothless. I didn't want to wake him up when I took off. I thought about what I was about to do and what the consequences would be but even that wasn't enough. I took off and flew towards the village. I had to see them before I left forever.

The first place I stopped was my house. Even though he wasn't there, I had to say good bye to. I jumped in through the window above my bed and quietly crawled down stairs. I stopped in my tracks when I saw my Dad sleeping down stairs.

'So he is home. Did he ever leave on that search after he saw me?' I thought as I got closer and gave a small nudge and silently climbed back up the stairs out the window. As I quietly ran through the village, I looked back on more time at my house.

'Good bye Dad. I love you.' I thought as I headed to Fishlegs house.

I saw that his window was open and jumped in. Thank Thor that he was asleep. I got closer and nudged his face the same way I did my Dad's. It was the only way I knew how to say good bye. Once I was sure that I was done, I jumped out and made my way to the forge. I had to say good bye to Gobber and destroy my notes and designs.

When I made it I saw that Gobber was still up. I knew it was risky going in, but if I waited too long, Toothless would see that I was gone and probably be all over my hyde about leaving the cove without him.

Toothless had been telling me for days, ever since I learned to fly, that I wasn't to leave the cove without him because I hadn't yet learned to defend myself yet. But since this was the last night I would be on the island where I was born, I knew that Toothless would

allow me to say good bye before we left, but I just wanted this to be my own special time to see my family before I said good bye forever.

I waited two hours before Gobber finally left and went into his own house. When the light finally went out, I snuck into the forge and the back room where I kept my notes. Not to make a scene, I concentrated my fire and gave a small blast to burn the pages but not the walls. I watched as everything I had designed and worked on ever since I was made Gobber's apprentice disappear in small fires around me. It was almost too painful to see it all go but it was the only way to make sure that none of my work ever hurt other dragons.

I don't know when I had become so attached to dragons, but ever since I grew to care deeply for Toothless, I knew that I wouldn't want anything I made to hurt him. To him the dragons were family and now they were apart of mine as I was now one of them. And we protect family.

Once the last page was gone, I left and went back to Gobber's house. I couldn't jump through the window because Gobber always kept his window closed at night. I quietly pushed the door open and crawled up the stairs and nudged his head saying good bye and thank you for everything and for being a great mentor. I crept back out and closed the door. I made my way quietly out of the village to edge if the forest.

I took one last look back and flew back to the cove. I made it back and settled down beside Toothless. I finally felt better and closed my eyes and hoped that we would be safe when we left. I didn't know where he planned to go, but hoped that it was somewhere I could forget all the pain I had to get through in my life. Somewhere I could start over.

## 12. Chapter 12

### Chapter 12

I opened my eyes and saw that Hiccup was back. When she was gone the night before I was afraid she had left me, like she was afraid I had left her. I was ready to fly out of the cove to look for her. But something in the back of my mind told me she would be back and to just wait for her.

Reluctantly, I listened and just went back to my place. Now I see why, she did come back. Though I was curious where and why she had gone. I nudged her head and she moaned but opened her eyes. I saw a slight shade of red in her eyes and I knew she had been gone for a while.

"Where did you go last night?" I came out, not mincing words.

"You knew?" she asked tired and surprised.

"I woke up and saw that you were gone and was worried sick. I was worried that something had happened to you."

"I'm sorry." She said bowing her head in an ashamed fashion. "I couldn't sleep and I wanted to see my family one more time. I left to

say good bye."

"I thought I told you not to leave this cove for the village without me." I scolded

"I know, and I know you promised to let me say good bye before we left but I just wanted it to be special to me. Everyone was asleep, I swear. No one saw me." She explained hastily.

I sighed. This female was going to drive me crazy. "Well since you've already said good bye, I am guessing you are ready to go then?" I said shaking my head.

"Yes." She replied with slight sobs and tears in her eyes.

We walked out of from under the ledge and got ready for takeoff. I launched without any troubles, but before Hiccup could take off, ropes with stones tied to the ends wrapped around her and she crashed to the ground in mid-launch.

"Hiccup!" I cried flying back down to help her.

But then I was trapped as well. Humans started pouring into the cove.

"There it is and it looks like this Night Fury wasn't alone." One of them said looking at Hiccup and me.

"Doesn't matter. One of them will pay for what they did to my daughter." A human we had grown to call the Red Killer said as he stepped closer.

"Dad please it's me! Just look at me and you will see that it's me!" Hiccup cried as they started to pull us onto carts and locking us in.

I looked at her in surprise. The leader of the humans who had killed so many of my people was her father? She was so submissive and compassionate, loving and willing to learn. Everything these humans weren't. How could someone so unforgiving be her flesh and blood? It was then that I began to regret what I had done to her. The humans needed her, to show them there are other ways, other options to deal with their problems. That things are not always what they seem, there are two sides to each story. And I took her away from the people who needed her most.

I was shaken from my thoughts when I heard Hiccup cry out in pain. I looked and saw that they were trying to force her head into a muzzle and she was fighting crying out for her father to listen to her even though she knew that he couldn't understand her.

"Knock it out." Red Killer ordered. "Both of them. We'll get them to the arena faster if they aren't putting up a fight." The last thing I saw was a club struck across Hiccup's head. Then darkness overtook me.

### 13. Chapter 13

#### Chapter 13

I came to slowly. My head was throbbing and I couldn't move. No matter how much I struggled, whatever was holding me held fast. When my eyes adjusted to the darkness, I noticed something else.

'Where's Hiccup? I thought starting to panic.

When I called for her, she didn't answer. I started pulling harder on the restraints but they just wouldn't give. It was then the door opened and I saw the Red Killer again.

"You were right Gobber, it is awake."

"Should we knock it out again?" the human with him asked.

"No. It is almost time for Astrid's final exam. We'll see how she fairs with both of them. After all she is the best we have. Let's give her a challenge." The Red Killer said leaving. The other human followed suit.

'The other one?' I thought.

So Hiccup was alive. But for how long? Would they be releasing both of us at the same time or separately. If the released both of us at once, I had a chance to get Hiccup and myself out of here. But if they released us separately, it was going to be a bit of a challenge. But at this point I really didn't care, as long as Hiccup and I got out together that's all that mattered to me right now.

I started concentrating my magic to build up my strength to break the chains and collar that held me. If I could break free, then I could get Hiccup out too. But then I remembered something, I couldn't see Hiccup anywhere. I called out her name. No answer, I tried again, still no answer. I was starting to panic. If she wasn't here, where was she?

"Would you stop yelling? They're going to comeback in here and knock you out again if you keep it up." I heard a gruff voice growl.

Then I saw flames and saw who had been talking. It was Fire One and rather grouchy one at that.

"I am sorry. I was calling out for someone." I apologized as best I could through the muzzle.

"I'll get that off you. Just promise me you won't yell anymore." He offered.

I nodded my head and the Fire One breathed a small flame and the muzzle broke through. I wiggled my maw for a second to get the feeling back.

"I am sorry for yelling. I am just really about someone." I explained.

"I heard, loud and clear. Why were you yelling 'Hiccup'? If you were yelling for one of our own you would call them by their kind." He asked quizzically.

"She has a name. It's Hiccup." I snapped unintentionally.



"I am sorry. I didn't know." The Fire One said sounding annoyed and hurt.

"Sorry, it's just that ever since I realized the mistake I made turning her into one of my kind, I have become rather worried and protective of her. I guess it's because, I didn't want to admit it but, I am in love with her. I just don't have the scales to tell her. I am afraid that if I tell her, she'll push me away for what I did to her." I explained settling down.

"What do you mean 'turned her into one of your kind'?" the Fire One asked lifting a brow ridge.

"She was once human. She shot me down and I expected her to kill me, but she hesitated and I broke free and put a spell on her that she would change into one of my kind if she let her emotions run too high for too long." I explained feeling the guilt eat me faster and more viciously.

"You have fallen in love with a human?" the Fire One exclaimed his flames almost going out. "Do you know what that means?" he said growling in agitation.

"I know but that doesn't change my feelings for her. All I hope is that she feels the same way and that I can keep her alive, unlike I was able to do with my first mate. Hiccup and I maybe the last Dark Ones in existence, but that is not why I love her.

"I love her because she never fought back or did anything to hurt me on purpose. She was so kind and submissive. She acted so kind to me and I took her entire life away from her when I cast that spell on her. I have promised myself that I would do everything in my power to find a way to reverse the spell to change her back." I explained pulling on the chains again. "I owe her that."

## 14. Chapter 14

### Chapter 14

I opened my eyes and my head was aching badly. It felt like someone had slammed me in the head. When I recollected my thoughts, I remembered, someone had. Duh.

I raised my paw to rub my head, but instead I couldn't move. When my eyes adjusted to the dark, I saw where I was. I was inside one of the cages in the arena and was chained to a cart.

"Do you think she's awake?" I heard a voice say in the dark.

"Sounds like it, but we still need to be careful. She's a Dark One." I heard another voice say.

I was starting to get a little uneasy. I couldn't turn my head to see them and I couldn't open my mouth to talk.

"She's trying to talk. We should get that thing off her." The first voice said. "I don't think she's going to hurt us."

"Alright, but if she makes one move, I'm going for it."

Immediately, I smelled the flammable gas around me and heard a spark. I braced myself and the explosion happened. I now knew who was in here with me, a Zippieback. After the smoke cleared, I recomposed myself and readjusted my eyes.

"Thank you." I said bowing my head in gratitude. "You really helped me."

"You're welcome. It just looked uncomfortable."

It was then I noticed something else. "Did you guys see the humans bring another Nighâ€| Dark One here while I was out cold?" I asked feeling uneasy.

"Yes, but he is in another cage. The humans thought the two of you together would prove to be too much of a challenge, so they are keeping you separate until they release you to fight."

"Fight? Fight who?" I asked feeling an awful pit in my stomach.

"They are going to have you and the other Dark One battle their champion to the death. They plan on releasing you at the same time to give their so called warrior a challenge since they say she was proving to be better than they thought she would be."

A horrible feeling gripped at my chest. They were going to be pitting me and Toothless against Astrid. Who else would it be? No one was as good as her when it came to being the best. I couldn't believe it, Toothless and I would have to fight for our lives but there is no way in Thor's name I could ever bring myself to hurt her. Even though she and I were never really close or even friends, I still looked at her like a sister and didn't want her to get hurt. But if I didn't then Toothless and I would be killed.

All this running through my head, I almost didn't notice a voice at the back of my mind.

"\_Please be okay Hiccup. I could never live with myself if I ever lost you like I lost my mate."\_

I snapped out of my thoughts and tried to listen again. This time I tried to give a reply.

"\_Hello? Who is this?"\_

"\_Hiccup, is that you?"\_

"\_Yes, it's me, who are you?"\_

"\_It's me, Toothless. Are you okay, the humans haven't hurt you have they?"\_

"\_No I'm fine. But I don't know for how much longer."\_

"\_What do you mean?"\_

"\_The villagers are going to be releasing you and me at the same time

to face someone I looked to as a sister. Her name is Astrid and she is the best new warrior in the village. And I don't think I could bring myself to hurt her."\_

\_"Don't worry about it. Now that I know when they'll be releasing us, I have a plan. Just listen to me and so everything I tell you and everything will be alright. Okay?"\_

\_"Alright."\_

It seemed like it might work. I was still worried about the outcome, but as long as we got out okay, and no one got hurt, that's all that mattered to me.

## 15. Chapter 15

**\*\*Don't worry AtkaikFF, I won't change her back. Just wait and see.\*\***

### Chapter 15

The Fire One helped me get free of my restraints and I instructed the Twin One to free Hiccup of hers. It was only a matter of time before they would release us and then Hiccup and I would finally be able to leave this Dracon forsaken island.

"Are you sure that your plan will free all of us?" the Fire One asked.

"Yes, if everything goes right, we will all be free." I answered preparing to be freed of the dark cage.

"Then, if it does work, I wish you and your lover a strong wind and safe travels Dark One." He said bowing his head.

"Toothless. My name is Toothless." I said feeling very proud to be introducing my name for the first time.

The Fire One pulled his head back in surprise. "What, you have a name? Who named you?" he asked in bewilderment.

"My lover, Hiccup, the other Dark One." I said feeling grateful for what she had done for me.

"It is rather courteous of her to give you a name, but of all things, why did she choose that?"

"She observed how our teeth retract and to her it was just a play on terms." I explained feeling that same warm feeling I had felt when I first dreamed about Hiccup and I flying together. "And to be brutally honest, I wouldn't have chosen another name if it was from her. She has done so much for me but to me the most important is that she was willing to give up everything to learn from me and leave the only home she has ever known for our safety. She is so submissive, while it is rather touching, I need to teach her how to stand up for herself from time to time. And when we are free of this Dracon forsaken island, and find somewhere safe, that is exactly what I am going to do."

"I see. You love her that much?"

"More than I think I ever will again. After I lost my first mate I thought I would never love again. But only now do I see I was wrong. Hiccup is everything that she was and more. I love her more than I think even myself can understand."

Suddenly the doors opened and a handful of humans came in. Some were herding me out the others were cornering the Fire One into a corner to keep him from escaping. I didn't put up much of a fight because if everything worked out then every dragon trapped here would be free and safe.

I looked around and saw a human in the middle of the arena and Hiccup was standing a short distance away. I gave her a nod and she nodded back. I made a lunge for the human female and Hiccup turned back around and started exercising the fruits of her training with me. She unleashed a fury of fire blasts and destroyed the cage doors. She was stronger than I thought and I am sure that she was surprised herself because I had to push her out of the way as an axe whizzed passed us.

Once the other dragons were free, the humans started pouring in to capture us again. But this time, we were ready. I blasted a hole in the bars and chains above us and we all flew out with Hiccup bringing up the rear. We did not stop we kept going. Once we were sure we had put some distance between us and the island, Hiccup and I broke off and flew in another direction.

We continued on for a couple of hours and I noticed that Hiccup started to falter. I turned back and told her we would be landing soon, to just hold on for a little longer. We reached a small island within a couple of minutes and landed on the beach. We walked to the tree line and she collapsed. I raced to her side and nudged her for assurance that she was okay.

"I'm alright. I'm just tired that's all. All I need is some rest." She replied breathing heavily.

"I am so sorry for pushing so hard. You are still new at flying and are not yet used to flying long distances." I apologized berating myself.

"It's okay. We got away, that's all that matters." She said closing her eyes.

I laid down beside her and draped my wing over her. I laid my head close to hers and closed my eyes as well giving in to the urge to fall asleep.

My last thoughts were, 'I promise Hiccup, I will find a way to change you back.'

## 16. Chapter 16

### Chapter 16

My eyes opened and I tightened my wings. Emptiness. I jolted up and saw Hiccup was gone. I started to panic and started searching the

small island for her. I found her stretching her wings by a nearby river. I could tell she was in a lot of pain. I sighed and ran down to stop her.

"What are you doing? What have I told you about overworking your wings?" I scolded nudging her wings back down.

"I just thought that if I could give my wings more exercise then they would be stronger and we would be able to fly for longer periods of time. They were only sore yesterday because I am not used to flying with them. If I can give them more exercise then they won't bother me so much." She replied sheepishly.

"As much as it makes me proud that you are willing to practice, if you keep pushing yourself you won't be able to fly anymore period." I said signaling her to follow me back to camp.

We walked back slowly with her wincing with every step. I stooped down and offered her to climb on my back.

"No, I'm too heavy. I'm fine really." She said seething trying to hide her pain.

"I'm stronger than I look and you can't even walk without biting your tongue to keep from screaming out in pain. I can see it in your eyes." I argued back. "Now get on my back."

She rather slowly climbed on and held on with what little strength she had left and we rushed back to camp.

Once we arrived, I set her down and settled down close to her. I started to notice that she had tears in her eyes.

"Is something wrong?" I asked sadly.

"It's just, I'm happy that we escaped and helped all those dragons escape, but it hurts me to know that other dragons are only going to keep getting hurt unless we show my people that dragons are not what we thought they were." She said wiping her tears away.

"Maybe we can. If we can show them what we are really like and why we do what we do, they might understand and learn not to kill us anymore. But as happy as it might sound it's also dangerous."

"Why?"

"Because that would mean that we would have to bring them to our island and what is on our island is far beyond anything you have ever seen."

"What's so dangerous?"

"It is a monster, the size of the mountain our island is made of. It could swallow you and me and not even notice. If we brought your people to our island, they would die."

"But what if we could show them that we are not what they think we are, by destroying that monster while protecting them and they learn how we really are? You once told me that we are the strongest dragons

there have ever been. What if we could kill it and show them what we are really like?" she said her eyes shining full of hope.

"Even if we could entice that thing to fight, you have no experience and you have no strength to fly right now. You would die before we even got that thing to leave the mountain." I said sullenly. "It would work if you had the strength, then maybe it would work but until you do, we are not going anywhere until you get your strength back. That means no unnecessary exercising and no more sneaking off. If you want to grow stronger, I will help you. You are still getting use to your new body and still need to learn to use it in combat. So once you are able to move again, I will train you if you wish to learn to fight." I offered settling her down. "For now, just let your body rest."

## 17. Chapter 17

### Chapter 17

I stretched under Toothless's wings and heard his heartbeat. For some reason, it was so calming, it made me feel safe. I listened until my eyes grew heavy and I fell asleep.

I woke with a start. I looked around and Toothless was gone. I tried to get up to look for him but I couldn't even move. With each attempt to move, my body stung and my muscles burned. Before long I finally managed to get to my feet, but taking any steps was proving to be even more of a challenge. Not that it mattered because as soon as I got to my feet, Toothless came gliding back down.

"I thought I told you to let your body rest. You really are proving to be a stubborn dragoness." He said with a smirk.

"When you weren't here when I woke up, I thought something had happened. I was just trying to get up and go find you, but I couldn't even move." I said laying back down.

"Your stomach started growling while you slept, I just left to find food. No need to worry." He said laying back down beside me.

He then dropped the fish he had been carrying in front of both of us. We ate until our bellies felt full and I settled back down next to him.

"Toothless, what am I to you?" I asked. Toothless brought his head up abruptly in surprise. "You say you are only staying with me until I can take care of myself, but when I'm with you, I feel like you are doing it for another reason, like you have other feelings for me."

"You would be right. I love you Hiccup. You have changed me, you gave me back feelings I never thought I would ever have again. You the only one who has ever been able to give these feelings back to me. After I lost my mate, I thought I would never love again, but after meeting you and getting to know the real you, you reminded me so much of her and then seeing your heart so kind and willing to learn, I never thought I could I love someone like you until you showed me otherwise. I would die before I let anything hurt you like humans hurt her. I am sorry that I took you away from your home. Had I known

what I was taking from a village who needed you so badly, I would have reacted differently. I am so sorry." He said with his eyes shining.

"Don't be. You have given me more than anyone ever has since my mother died. And, you are not alone in your feelings Toothless. I love you but I was afraid to tell you because I thought that someone like me wouldn't have been your type. I am sorry I shot you down." I said rubbing my head against his.

"I am glad. I promise, I will do everything in my power to change you back, to bring you back to the people who need you most."

"No. Yes, they need me, but you need me more. If I change back, you will be alone again. I want to be with you. I love you Toothless, I want to stay with you, no matter what." I cried wrapping my throbbing wings around him, resting my head against his chest. "Please, don't change me back. If you do, we can't be together anymore. I already lost my mother and had to grow up with her. If I lost you, it would destroy me. Please, don't change me back. I don't want to be alone again." I said tears running down my cheek.

"I see. You are more like me than I realized. You too fear being alone. I'll never leave you alone. Just be happy in state a little longer. I promise, you will never lose me." He said gently freeing himself and guiding me down to rest again. "Just rest for now and dream of better times. When you open your eyes, I will be right here next to you. I'll never leave you alone." He said as I closed my eyes and fell away into sleep.

## 18. Chapter 18

### Chapter 18

I watched as Hiccup slowly drifted away to sleep. As I did, I thought about what she had told me. She shared in my feelings for her and like me, she feared being alone. I rested my head close to hers and tried to picture what it must have been like for her to grow up without her mother and always trying to fit in with her other people. But all the while, no one trying to understand her. As I thought about this, I realized it was no different than what I had dealt with ever since I was a hatchling.

My mother was gone and I hardly had any friends, aside from my first mate. I wanted so badly to be a part of my clan, but I was stronger and more dangerous than the others.

'Perhaps we were meant to meet Hiccup. You and I are so much alike. Now I know why I felt so compelled to get to know you. You and I were destined to find each other.' I thought as I let my thought help me drift off to sleep.

\_I was flying around our island when I caught a familiar scent. The scent of blood, Hiccup's blood. I turned around and saw that He had her in his teeth dragging her down into the red mists. I dove down as fast as my wings would carry me. I reached for her and managed to grab her forelegs. I pulled her free and we flew out of the mountain. We flew until we landed on a small island. I checked her over and noticed the full extent of her injuries. her tail was badly torn and

her tail wings were barely hanging on. I tried to use my magic to heal her, but all it seemed to do was poison her. The last thing she said to me was, "I will love you forever even after my death." Then I saw the light leave her eyes.\_

I woke with a start. I looked under my wings and saw Hiccup was still there and she was still breathing. I heaved a sigh of relief. I started to reconsider my plan. What if in the end, it was too dangerous for her anyway? What if no matter what I did I was still going to lose her?

"I'm sorry Hiccup. But I just can't lose you too. I will stop the fighting between our people. Just stay here and I'll come back for you. I promise, I will keep your people safe and you will see me again." I said as I got to my feet and walked a short distance away.

I looked back once more and took to the skies toward Hiccup's homeland. As I flew, I thought about the decision I was making and that it was the only way to end the war and keep the only thing I treasure safe. I knew she would eventually come looking for me, but as long as she was safe from that monster, that's all that mattered to me.

\*\*I know this chapter is a little short but I am having to adjust to this new computer so just bare with me until I get the hang of it.  
agdoll95 :~\*\*\*

## 19. Chapter 19

### Chapter 19

I was startled awake by the sound of wolves deeper in on the island. They must have been hunting. I tried to stand up again but my legs were still too sore to even let me do that. But I noticed something wasn't right. I looked around and saw that Toothless was nowhere to be found. I forced myself to stand up and made the greatest effort to walk around the island to search for him.

After finally making it half way around the island, which felt like it took for eternity, I took the time to let my legs rest before continuing on.

'Toothless where are you?' I thought as I caught my breath.

After an hour I got back up and started around the island again. I tried opening the connection Toothless and I shared between our minds, but he wasn't answering me. I kept trying but no matter many times I called out his name he wouldn't answer me.

I kept getting the feeling that something had happened to him. I wanted so badly to open my wings and fly off to search for him. But no matter what I did my wings wouldn't open. I just kept going in and around the island, I knew I wasn't going to find him, but it was all I could do because I didn't know what to do next.

I couldn't fly to go searching for and I was still too sore to keep going on for much longer. But I pushed the pain to the back of my mind and kept walking.



When I came to the river, I started to try and stretch my wings again. I kept moving the muscles in my back until I felt my wings start to move again albeit slowly and painfully for being closed up for two days but hey were moving and that was all I needed to know. I kept going until I could get them to move freely. It took forever but I finally had complete control over my wings again. But the rest of my body was still sore. But again I pushed the pain to the back of my mind. I walked back to the beach and made an attempt to fly. I took a wobbly start when I finally took off, but I was back up into the air and at the time that's all that mattered.

But I still had one problem, I didn't know which way Toothless went. If I just kept flying to random islands to search for him, who knows what would happen to him in the time it would take for me to finally find him.

I landed back on the beach and started to narrow down the options. I it was then that I remembered what we had talked about the day before. Our plan to make my people understand why dragons were raiding Berk. A terrible thought gripped me in the pit of my stomach.

"He wouldn't, would he?" I asked aloud.

I got up again and took to the skies flying towards the dragons' nest. All I knew I had to do was fly toward Helheim's Gate. After that, it was a matter of if I would know where to go afterwards.

After what felt like forever, I reached the fogs that concealed Helheim's Gate. I >hesitated for a minute. I got that bad feeling again but I pushed to the back of my mind and went in. It was then I felt this strange buzzing in the back of my head, something was calling for me. I thought it was Toothless, but this one felt darker, more evil than anything I had felt before. Not seeing a lot of options of how I was going to find the nest, I followed it until I came to an island with a volcano in the center of it. I could see the top of the mount glowing red as if it could still erupt at any moment.<p>

I flew toward the mountain and through an opening. As I flew in, I noticed there was an eerie red glow at the end of the tunnel. As I came to another chamber, I saw what was making the red glow, a hot pit not filled with lava, but with red hot mist. I flew over it and I heard something that made my heart skip a beat.

"\_And who would you be newcomer." \_I heard a strong voice from below in the mist.

"I am Hiccâ€¦ A Dark One who got separated from my herd. I saw this island and thought maybe I could rest for the night." I lied feeling my heart start to beat faster and faster.

I thought if it beat any faster it was going to burst out of my chest.

"\_Interesting. Tell me young Dark One, are you a descent hunter?\_" The voice asked.

I landed on a ledge overlooking the pit. "I can, but I am still learning." That was true.

"\_Very well then, you can learn from the others.\_" The voice answered from below.

"What?"

"\_They are in the next tunnel over.\_"

"Thank you but I think I should really get going. I didn't mean to intrude." I said trying to fly off, but then something gripped me at the back of my mind.

"\_No, this is going to be your home for a very, very long time.\_" It said as it forced me to land back on the ledge.

It was then I saw what Toothless had been talking about. A head the size of ten ships rose from the red mist and looked me in the eye.

"\_You, just like every dragon that has passed through here, will now serve me as my hunters forever.\_" He said as I felt his eyes boring a hole through my thoughts.

It wasn't long before I felt completely hypnotized. I couldn't move my body, my thoughts ran freely but my body remained completely frozen. Now I understood why Toothless didn't want me to come here. But now it was too little too late. This monster had me in its grip and there was no way for me to get out.

"Now go to the tunnel and wait with the others for your next hunt." He ordered.

"Yes master." I answered against my will. '\_What am I going to do? Toothless, I am so sorry. I should have stayed on the island like you said. Please, help me.\_' I pleaded in my thoughts feeling how pointless it was. If Toothless didn't answer me when I was safe, what was the chance he would hear me now.

## 20. Chapter 20

### Chapter 20

As I got closer to the island, I got this horrible feeling in the back of my mind, like Hiccup was in trouble. I tried to ignore it, but the more I did, the stronger it got. It was then I heard something that made my heart skip a beat.

'\_What am I going to do? Toothless, I am so sorry. I should have stayed on the island like you said. Please, help me.\_' \_It was Hiccup's voice.

She was in trouble. But I had to get her people to the nest. I kept going.

"I promise Hiccup, I'm coming, just hold on." I said to myself out loud.

When I finally made it to the island, I was ambushed and dragged back to the arena. There I was chained and racked again. This time, I didn't put up a fight, but once they had me chained, I started doing the best I could to get them to understand that I could take them to the nest.

At first, no one got the message. But then a husky human with yellow hair stepped forward and studied my behavior.

"I think it's trying to get to the nest." He said timidly.

"What are you saying Fishlegs?" the Red Killer asked.

"I'm saying, I think that we haven't been able to find it because maybe only a dragon can find nest." He finished.

'Finally someone gets it.' I sighed in the back of my mind.

After hearing what the husky one had to say, the Red Killer ordered me to be put onto one of their vessels and they readied themselves for battle. Not that it was going to do them much good, but as long as they headed for the nest that was all that mattered.

"Set sail. We head for Helheim's Gate." The Red Killer said. He looked at me. "Lead us home, devil." He spat venomously.

It was very insulting, but once they understood, it wouldn't even matter.

## 21. Chapter 21

### Chapter 21

I tried so hard to break the monster's control over me, but no matter how hard I tried, I couldn't get his dark demonic voice out of the back of my mind.

\_"You really are proving to be a strong willed one. But even the strongest wills can be broken." \_ I heard him say to me again.

"Please just let me go." I pleaded.

\_"No sorry. You see, when you are like me, you can't get the things you need in life because so much get in your way. But when you have the power to get others to do what you want, you take advantage of that." \_He explained to me rather smugly. \_"Why do you think that Dark One made it so you would be one of his kind? He doesn't love you, he's trying to control you. He knows how submissive you are and he has taken advantage of that. Why do you think it was so easy for me to gain control of you, because of your pathetic submissive nature. He has been controlling you this whole time just as I have taken control over you." \_

I felt a strong blow to my chest yet nothing had touched me. How could he have possibly known about me and Toothless? I hadn't told him anything. Then a horrible thought crept into my mind. He was reading my thoughts, my memories. Then another thing came to mind, what if what he was telling me was true and that Toothless didn't

really love me, he only wanted to control me? But I pushed that thought away. There was no way that this beast was telling me the truth. Toothless had gone through everything I had when he was a new born just as I had when I was younger. He did so much for me and even helped me escape the arena and taught me how to fly.

But then something else came to mind. Toothless had promised me that he would be there when I woke up the night before yet when I woke up this morning he was gone. And when I tried to reach out to him he wouldn't answer. Maybe what he was telling me was the truth. But until I found out for sure myself, I wasn't going to make any decisions about him or us. I loved Toothless, whether his feelings for me were true or not. Toothless had done more for me than anyone had in my entire life.

Then I heard a loud thud. I snapped out of my thoughts and listened again. It happened again, and again, and again, until finally the wall at the front came down. Yet not one dragon in the entire chamber moved. It was like we were all frozen. I looked down and saw my Dad at the entrance.

How had they found this place? Then another chilling thought came to mind. Toothless hadn't come back to the nest, he had gone back to Berk to get the villagers to follow him. But knowing them, it couldn't have gone well. I felt a pang in my heart and worried if Toothless was still alive.

I was snapped out of my thoughts when I felt a strong heat pass by me. I looked again and saw that it was a ball of fire. I heard my Dad yell and all the dragons including me were forced out of the chamber. Not by our will but by his. He wanted to slaughter everyone on the island and thought we would only get in the way. After I was out, I felt his control over me break. I finally had control over myself again. I landed on a nearby sea stack and started looking around holding on to the slim hope that Toothless was with them.

Suddenly, I heard a voice from one of the ships. I looked and saw him fighting to get free of the rack he was in. I flew down and just threw myself at him.

"What are you doing here? I thought I told you to stay on the island." He scolded after I got the muzzle off him.

"You also told me that you would be there when I woke up. Why did you leave?" I asked feeling painful tears coming to my eyes.

"I didn't want you get hurt. I was worried that no matter what I taught you, you still get hurt when it came time for us to face Him. I thought I could handle it on my own."

"Toothless!" I started to say, but suddenly the entire mountain face started to crumble and everyone started to run for the beach.

I turned about and finally saw the entire body of the beast. I got back to work getting the restraints off of Toothless but just as I was about to get the collar off, a giant tail crushed the boat and Toothless went under. I dove down after him and finally got the collar off.

We swam back to the surface and looked down at the beach. Everyone

was trying to get the far side if the island to safety. All the ships had been destroyed and they had no way to get off the island. I looked around frantically for my Dad. I saw him about to run back and face the monster. Gobber was with him. I couldn't take it anymore. I took to the skies and flew high above that beast and blew a fire ball at the back of his head. He was disorientated long enough for me to grab my Dad and Gobber and carry them to the ledge where Toothless was waiting for me.

"Are you crazy? That thing could have killed you." He scolded me again.

"But he didn't it's time we face that thing and show him that we will not be controlled like puppets anymore." I said defiantly.

"You have learned well." He said getting ready for takeoff. "Ready to fight?"

"You got it love." I said standing next to him.

But before I could do anything, I felt someone touch my neck. I looked back and saw that it was my Dad. He didn't look angry or hostile this time, but curious and full of hope.

"Hiccup?" he questioned me.

I nodded and nudged him in a hug. I lifted my head and saw that he had tears in his eyes. He hugged me back.

"I'm sorry, for everything." He apologized.

"Yeah me too." I answered even though I knew he couldn't understand me.

"You don't have to go up there. I thought I lost you once, I don't want to lose you again." He said with fear in his voice.

I gave him a look that said what he had always told others, 'We're Vikings it's an occupational hazard.'

"I'm proud to call you my daughter." He said giving me one last hug.

I looked back at Toothless and we took off. We climbed higher and higher. Then I heard a scream that made my blood chill. I circled back around and saw that Astrid was about to be killed. I was about to dive down to get her, but the Nadder from the ring beat us to it by swooping in and grabbing her just as the beast's foreleg was about to crush her.

Astrid looked more surprised than anything but she thanked the Nadder and climbed onto her back. The Nadder carried her to safety.

Toothless and I circled back around. It was then I got a good look at that beast's back.

"That thing has wings." I called to Toothless. "Let's see if it can use them."

## 22. Chapter 22

### Chapter 22

I had no idea what Hiccup was thinking, but I could tell she had an idea. So I turned with her and we dived back down toward the island and fired our shots at the base of His wings. We then pulled back up and circled back around.

"You think that did it?" she called to me.

"It's a pretty safe bet." I called back looking behind us.

"Well he can fly, but we can do better." She called as we circled the island.

I saw her look up. "Alright, Toothless time to disappear." She said pulling up.

I followed suit as we rose higher and higher into the sky. I still wasn't sure what she was planning, but I didn't have any better ideas so I just followed her. As we rose into the dark clouds I could hear the monster screaming for us to show ourselves. I figured out why Hiccup had pull up here. Here in the cover of darkness we had the advantage.

"\_Aim for his wings." \_I heard her say through our link.

"\_What are you planning?" \_I asked worriedly.

"\_Don't worry everything is going to be alright. Trust me." \_She replied.

Seeing that she wasn't going to be any more specific, I did as she asked. We circled around him several times, each time blasting his wings in different sections of each wings. At last he went for broke and lit up the clouds with his fire.

"Okay time's up, let's see if this works." She yelled as we saw that we had lost the cover of the clouds.

We broke into another dive. This time swooping past him.

"Come on! Is that the best you can do!" Hiccup yelled.

"Coward!" I cried out.

He clamped his jaws narrowly missing us. We pulled into another dive this time with him close behind. Now I was really getting worried. There was no telling what she was planning, but I knew Hiccup had something in mind so I tried to hold back my fear.

"Stay with me my love, just little bit longer." She called out to me. "Hold Toothless."

I heard the hiss of gas filtering into His throat. Now I knew what Hiccup had been planning all along. "Now!" she called.

We flipped and fired. The gas in His mouth and throat burned. I saw

his eyes grow wide with fear and he suddenly opened his wings to try and slow down. But the damage we had done to his wings was too great. They started to burn and tear apart. Hiccup and I righted ourselves and pulled out of the dive. As he made impact on the ground, the explosion was enormous. The fire climbed up His body, where Hiccup and I were trying to maneuver out. We weaved in and out of His back spikes. I looked back to make sure that had some distance between us and the flames.

"Toothless look out!" Hiccup cried pushing me out of the way.

As I tumbled midair, I heard a sickening crack. I righted myself and saw Hiccup falling down toward the flames.

"No!" I cried plunging down to catch her.

I flapped my wings harder and harder to dive faster. I was able to grab her and hold her close to me. The flames closed around us. We could handle the heat, but here was no guarantee that she would have survived the fall. I grabbed her pulled out of the flames. I flew out of the flames back toward the beach where the humans were waiting for us.

"Hiccup!" I heard her father cry.

I stood defensively beside her, but I felt a pang in my chest. I found myself realizing that I could no longer hate this human. Grudgingly I stepped aside and let him see his daughter.

"Hiccup." He sighed.

He looked her over. She was still breathing. He took off his helmet and placed his head to her chest.

"She's alive, you brought her back alive." I heard him say as his voice started to crack.

"Sir, what are you talking about?" I heard from behind me. I turned and saw the female from a few days ago.

"Astrid, this Night Fury is Hiccup, she has saved us. Her and this Night Fury who has saved her." Hiccup's father explained with tears in her eyes.

"How can you be so sure?"

"A father knows when he is willing to listen. We need to salvage what we can and get back to Berk." He ordered as he stood up.

"Yes sir." The other humans replied.

"Astrid, you and the Night Fury watch over Hiccup."

"Yes sir." The female replied.

I settled down next to Hiccup and draped a wing over her unconscious form. As I was calming down, after what may be the most terrifying battle of my life, the female Hiccup called, 'Astrid' stood watch over us both. I expected her to glare at me and her to no end. But as I watched her, I noticed a growing curiosity in her eyes.

"This really is her is it?" She asked turning to me.

I nodded. "So, she and you, in the arena, you never planned to fight me. You just wanted to get out."

I nodded again. As we are talking, a Spiked One came and landed in front of Astrid. It was the same one who had saved her in battle.

"I know you, you're the Nadder who saved me." The Spiked One nodded. "Thank you. I guess this is what Hiccup was trying to prove with refusing to fight me and freeing all those dragons in the arena, that everything we know about you guys is wrong."

It felt good that she was growing to understand. As I was listening to Astrid talk to the Spiked One, I felt Hiccup's body growing smaller. I looked under my wing and saw that she was changing back. Yet her scent wasn't changing. It confused me to no end.

"Stoick, you need to see this. It's Hiccup." I heard Astrid cry.

Hiccup's father came running. When he laid eyes on his daughter, he looked like he was about to break down. He held her and hugged her tight. He then laid her back down next to me and placed his pelt over her bare form. I placed my wing back over her and hid her from any prying eyes. I feared my spell had been broken.

As the humans worked to find a way to get back to their island, I was growing tired. It wasn't that I feared falling asleep with the humans on the island. It was that I had so many questions about why Hiccup changed back. But they could keep me awake long. My eyes grew heavy and I fell asleep.

"Your spell isn't broken." I heard. I turned and saw my first mate again. \_

"It has merely been softened. She can now change back and forth at will. But there is a catch. If her emotions, such as anger or sadness, run too high she will change back until she calms down. If she does change under such circumstances, if she is not with you, she will lose control and act completely on instinct and will have no distinction between friend or foe. You must be with her if she is to retain her sanity under such changes. Do you understand?" she explained.\_

"I do. Thank you." I answered.\_

## 23. Chapter 23

### Chapter 23

I was slowly coming back. I felt a hot breath brush across my face. I slowly opened my eyes and saw Toothless staring at me.

"Hey Toothless." I said sitting up.

As I sat up, I noticed something, I had hands again. I threw back the blankets and looked into my reflection in the bowl of water by my



bed. I was human again.

"Toothless, what happened?" I asked feeling tears start to come to my eyes.

He nosed my arm and nudged me out of my bed. I got up and followed him to the front door. Then I noticed something else. Toothless was in my house.

"Toothless, what are you doing here? Does my Dad know you're here?" I asked feeling very nervous.

I just followed him to the door and he pushed it open. The sight outside made my heart flutter. Humans and dragons were working together to repair the long damaged village. Smaller dragons were playing with the children. The larger dragons were either flying with other people on their backs or helping others repair houses or building stables for the other dragons.

"I knew it, I'm dead." I said matter- of -factly.

"No but you gave it your best shot." I heard my Dad chuckle behind me placing his hand on my shoulder. "So what do you think?" he said gesturing to the village.

As we made our way down, everyone was rushing to meet us.

"Turns out all we needed was a little more of this." He said gesturing to me.

"You just gestured to all of me." I said in disbelief.

At this point my head was spinning. I was human again and everyone was living as if the war never happened. Dragons and humans were together.

"Yes. All it took was for you to turn into a dragon to show us the whole story." Gobber said stepping forward.

I felt someone punch me in the arm. "That's for leaving." I heard Astrid say from behind me.

"Why would you justâ€¦" I began but she cut me off by pulling me into a hug.

"That's for saving us and coming back." She said pulling out of the hug.

The other teens came and pulled me and started asking a million questions all at once. I was trying to answer them, but I couldn't keep up. A cry I was hoping for finally came.

"Night Fury!"

Toothless came racing through the crowd and stopped in front of me. I hugged him tight and everyone mounted their dragons ready for their first flight around Berk. Gobber handed a saddle.

"Welcome home." He said with a big grin on his face.

I grinned back and strapped the saddle around Toothless. Once I was in place, I looked down at Toothless.

"Are you ready?" I asked.

He nodded. As I looked around me and thought about something else. I just kept thinking that I wouldn't have wished for this to be any other way.

## 24. Chapter 24

### Chapter 24

(Months later)

Hiccup and I were flying up above the clouds on our usual morning flight. It had been months since we defeated the Red Death (what the humans began calling Him) and Hiccup learned that she and I could still be together and she could be there for her people. In that time, I had taught her how to change back and forth and how to control her changes.

She had learned quickly though she did still have moments where she had lost control but I was always there to make sure she calmed down.

The time for the eggs to be hatched and for the adults to gather for them was almost here and I hadn't even told Hiccup about it yet. I didn't see the point since she and I probably weren't going to have any children anytime soon. But my mind wasn't on that, right now it was on the female flying right by me over the sea stacks around the island. It felt good to feel the cool crisp air flowing all around my body and to be sharing it with the one I love.

"What do say Love? Wanna go again?" Hiccup asked as we began to circle back when we heard a cry coming from the opposite direction.

We bobbed in and out of the dragons coming in our direction and flew back to the village. Once we landed, Hiccup changed back and ran to meet Astrid and her friends.

"Hiccup what's going on? Where are they going?" Astrid asked in a voice filled with panic.

Suddenly Hiccup was surrounded by the other villagers, all of them bombarding her with questions. Her father broke them up and asked a question that was on everyone's mind.

"Hiccup where are all of our dragons going?"

"Dad, I don't know." Hiccup said with fear in her voice.

She turned back to me and changed back into a dragon. "Where are the other dragons going?" she asked me.

"They are going to the hatching grounds. They will be back, it will just be awhile, a few days maybe." I answered.

She heaved a sigh of relief. "That's good. Thank you love." She said nudging my head and turning back to the village.

She explained what I had just told her. The village did look like they felt better, but it still seemed to weigh in them that their dragon companions wouldn't be there for their winter holiday. Hiccup's father called a meeting to the Great Hall and the entire village gathered within minutes. As for me I stayed outside. I stood on the cliff outside Hiccup house and watched out over the waves, wondering if the other dragons made it to the hatching grounds safely.

As I wondered this, I wondered what it would have been like if my first mate and I had been able to have children of our own.

## 25. Chapter 25

### Chapter 25

The other teens and I were just hanging at the back of the Great Hall. My Dad was trying to give the villagers some piece of mind about the dragons leaving. Me, I had other things on my mind, like how Toothless looked so sad when he told me about where the dragons were going. Did he want to have children but he never asked it of me because he thinks I would turn him down? Or did he and his first mate have children but lost them in battle?

I snapped out of my thoughts when I heard Snotlout suggesting that we leave. Since it seemed that we weren't needed there, it seemed like there was nothing that said we had to stay.

We walked through the village all trying to think positive because we all knew that the dragons were going to be back, but still we had all planned on having the dragons here with us.

"That was depressing." Ruffnut sighed.

"I know, I was actually looking forward to spending the holiday with Stormfly." Astrid replied.

Anyone could tell just by listening to her that she was losing the enthusiasm she always had. That only told the rest of us how out of place things had gotten with the dragons gone.

"It's not like they're gone forever. They just left to lay their eggs, they'll be back." I said trying to lift everyone's spirits.

"Easy for you to say. Your dragon won't go anyway without you." Tuffnut snapped back pointing to the cliff where Toothless usually sat looking over the ocean.

"Must be nice to have a dragon as a lover who wouldn't do anything to hurt you." Ruffnut said only making me feel worse.

"She's right you know. Toothless doesn't go anywhere unless you're with him." Snotlout said as he walked off.

"Guys come on, that's a bit harsh to blame her for Toothless not

wanting to leave her?" Astrid said reprimanding them.

"Yeah, Toothless loves her. If he doesn't want to leave her that's his choice, and it's not right for you to blame her for that." Fishlegs said as they walked off.

I just stood there thinking about how Tuffnut was right. If I wasn't with him, Toothless wouldn't go anywhere. I loved him, but I felt like I was holding him back. I walked back home and tried to get some sleep, but I couldn't even get my eyes to close. Toothless came in through the window above my bed and settled down on his own bed across from mine. As I looked at him, I thought about how he must be feeling. All his friends having children but he doesn't have any.

Finally I couldn't take it anymore. Even if I couldn't give him a child, I could still go with him to watch the newborn dragons coming into the world. I got up, changed into my dragon form and gently shook Toothless awake.

"Toothless, Toothless wake up." I urged softly.

"What is Hiccup, are you okay?" he asked as he blinked awake.

"Not really. I was just thinking about how much it must hurt to know that all your friends are having children and you probably won't. So I wanted to ask youâ€¦"

"Hiccup, you may be a dragon, but you are way too young to have children." He said cutting me off.

"That's not what I was going to say. I was going to ask you if you wanted to go to the hatching grounds to be there to watch. I know I can't have children now, but I thought until I'm old enough, maybe you and I could be there to watch. Just so you don't feel so left out." I said correcting him.

"Oh, sorry. I just thought thatâ€¦"

"I know, but don't worry, we will be able to have a family someday. So what do you say, you want to go visit?" I asked.

"I loved too." He answered getting up.

I changed back to my human form and wrote a note for my Dad explaining where I was going and when we would be back and wished him a happy Snoggletog. Once we were outside I changed back and we flew off.

'In time Toothless, we will have a family, I promise.' I thought as we got farther and farther from the island.

## 26. Chapter 26

### Chapter 26

(Three days later)

Three days passed and no one had seen a sign of the dragons returning

and with Hiccup gone with Toothless, no one knew what to expect.

Stoick seemed to be doing okay, but anyone could tell that he was just as upset about all this as the rest of us were. The twins, Fishlegs, Snotlout and I tried to make the best of things, but no matter how hard we tried, none of us could get any one's mind off the dragons. Eventually we all gave up and just went from day to day just doing this and that to help around the village to get ready for the winter holidays.

I was carrying oars down to the dock when I ran into Fishlegs, carrying a basket full of fish.

"Whoa Fishlegs you hungry? There's enough fish there to feed a dragon." I said trying to lighten our day with an attempt of humor like Hiccup would.

I knew Hiccup and I were never really friends but I always admired her determination to prove herself and the strength she had to keep going even when it seemed impossible. And I admitted that I was impressed with all the idea she would come up with. I sort of looked to her as a younger sister. We weren't really close until the war was over, but afterwards we both had the chance to know each other better than we each thought we did. And if I did have a sister, I would want it to be her.

"Oh, oh, oh a dragon, That'sâ€¦" Fishlegs stammered and scooted away.

If didn't sound suspicious to me I don't know what would. He was acting weird and I was going to find out what it was. I followed him to one of the sheds in the middle of the village and watched him go in and leave looking like he had something to hide. After he was out of sight, I snuck over and opened the door. The next thing I knew, there was a Gronckle barreling toward me. I jumped out of the way and watched as it kept going.

I recognized that Gronckle. "Meatlug?" I said out loud.

Fishlegs came running back. "Meatlug, what about presents? Hey?" He called hoping to convince him to come back.

Snotlout and the twins came running. We all went in and saw what had been going on in there for the past three days. We saw chains and hay and a supply of food.

"Astrid, I can't believe you." Fishlegs cried at me.

"You can't believe me! You kidnapped your dragon!" I shouted back.

"Well that makes it sound so mean." He whimpered.

"He flew away the second he was unleashed." I argued.

"I'm seventy-two percent sure he wanted to stay." He weakly argued back.

"Guys!" We heard Tuffnut call from the back.

We all got closer to see what was so interesting.

"Whoa, Meatlug barfed up a pile of rocks." Fishlegs exclaimed in surprise.

"You're such an idiot. Those aren't rocks. Your dragon laid eggs." Ruffnut huffed.

"Just like Hiccup said. But that still doesn't explain why she left too." Fishlegs said.

"Maybe she left with Toothless to have babies too." Snotlout said in a lousy attempt of a joke.

I punched him in the arm. "That is the worst idea ever Snotlout and I wouldn't say that around Stoick if I were you. You know she's too young to have kids, even if she is half dragon." I snapped kneeling back down to get a closer look at the eggs.

"Hey I'm just saying." Snotlout shrugged rubbing his arm.

"Hey, there's one thing I don't get, if those are Meatlug's eggs, how is that possible? Boy dragons don't lay eggs." Fishlegs asked quizzically.

"Yeah, your boy dragon is a girl dragon." Ruffnut said matter of factly.

"Okay, that actually explains a few things." Fishlegs said awkwardly.

"Hey everyone is missing their dragons, right?" I said having an idea come to mind.

"Oh here it comes." I heard Snotlout sigh.

"I've got an idea. It'll be another new Snoggletog tradition." I said holding up one of the eggs I decorated with a bow.

Everyone got the idea and we all set to work decorating the eggs and set out to put them in everyone's homes. Everyone was going to be so happy to have dragons around here again for the holidays.

## 27. Chapter 27

### Chapter 27

For the past three days, Hiccup and I watched newborn dragons take in their first breaths of life. It was so amazing. Hiccup couldn't help but coo at all the newborns.

"They are just so adorable." She would often say. "It is really a good thing those don't hatch on Berk." She said when she saw why we always came here to lay our eggs.

When the eggs hatch, they explode instead of the slow progress of other animals such as birds or lizards.

It was on our third day that we had a late arrival. "Meatlug. Where have you been? We thought you had gotten lost." She said as we greeted her.

"No, my rider locked me in the village. I would be angry, but he was scared of me leaving. How could I hold that against him?"

"Well, you're here now and everyone is safe on Berk." I said as we walked down the beach.

"Actually, there might be a problem." She said nervously.

"What are you talking about?" Hiccup asked nervous about what she had just heard.

"My eggs are still on Berk and they are due to hatch any minute now." Meatlug blurted out.

"Odin's beard, and you're telling us this now?" Hiccup exclaimed. "I have to get back and warn everyone what happens before they hatch." She said as she started to take off but I stopped her.

"Even if you could get there in time and warn them, what good would it do? How would you be able to get all the eggs out of the village and back here before they hatch?" I asked her.

"It's better than just standing by and doing nothing." I argued back.

I sighed. I loved her but once that dragoness got an idea there was no stopping her.

"You're right, but how would be able to stop the village from being destroyed?" I asked.

She landed and looked like she was deep in thought. At last she turned and finally had a look of defeat in her eyes.

"Fine I'll stay put, but when we get back, we have to explain everything to my father and the village. Deal?" she bargained.

"Deal." I answered.

## 28. Chapter 28

### Chapter 28

We ran as fast as we could to get the last of Meatlug's eggs hidden. I felt we had done the best thing for everyone this holiday.

"Wasn't this a great idea?" I asked feeling the excitement I had been missing for the past few days.

"Uh huh. Everyone's going to be so surprised." Fishlegs whispered.

Out of nowhere the house behind us exploded. Something came flying out and hit Fishlegs knocking him over.

"Surprise." Snotlout said smugly.

Whatever hit Fishlegs came flying back down and landed on top of him. It was a baby Gronckle. It was so cute, but I had other things on my mind, like what we had just seen.

"The eggs explode?" I asked wearily.

Explosions began to happen all over the village. "The eggs explode!" I cried.

Everyone was running out of their houses. Some on fire looking for water other preparing for battle like they were under attack. And some were searching for Hiccup even though it was hopeless because everyone knew she had left days ago. I ran around the village apologizing to any one I passed. Now I knew how Hiccup felt when she messed up.

Baby Gronckles were flying out of peoples' homes and crashing into whatever was in their path. Finally Stoick showed up at the plaza.

"What in Thor's name is going on?" he thundered.

"The eggs explode." I replied weakly as the house behind exploded.

Stoick managed to calm the masses and everyone groaned as we now had even more work to do now that the village had been destroyed again, just when we thought we were done having to rebuild our home after dragon attacks, we were right back where we started. At least this time it wasn't an attack, it was just baby dragons hatching and my stupid idea.

Now I knew what Hiccup went through all her life and how she felt. And I didn't like it. Now whenever someone gives her a hard time about it, I would know and step in to help defend her. Because if this what it feels like to be the screw up, I don't like and I imagined Hiccup didn't either.

\*\*Sorry about the short chapter. I didn't know how to prolong it any longer than that and I have a been busy lately. But I will update any chance I get. Promise, cross my heart hope to die, stick 20 needles in my eyes. \*\*

## 29. Chapter 29

### Chapter 29

Hiccup spent hours pacing along the beach after Meatlug told us about how her eggs were still on Berk and were due to hatch any minute now. I tried to calm her down but it was like she was in another world and I knew why, she was worried about her village and how her people were handling the eggs. Finally, I couldn't take it anymore.

"Hiccup, I love you but I swear, all this pacing you're starting to worry me." I said catching her shoulder and stopping her mid-pace.



"I'm sorry, it's just don't do so well not knowing if the people I love are doing okay. If Meatlug's eggs are hatching, I don't even want to think about what is happening to the village now." She said looking out over the ocean.

"I know. That's why I think it's time we go." I said turning her to face me.

"Are you sure? All these babies hatching, I thought you'd want to stay longer." She asked.

"I know, and while it is filling, it is not the same as watching my own hatch and enter the world. Besides, we can always watch next time. Right now the village needs us there and as its protectors, it's our duty to be there." I said reassuring her.

And it was true. I was happy to watch all these newborns coming into this life from the shell but it wasn't the same as watching my own breath in their first breath of life. And it wasn't as enjoyable when my mate was upset knowing her home was in trouble.

We said good bye to the other dragons and readied for take-off. But as soon we were in the air the rest of the dragons took flight as well.

"I'm guessing we signaled the return migration?" Hiccup asked awkwardly.

"I guess so." I answered.

But we had another problem. The hatchlings were too young to fly yet, their wings were too small and their muscles weren't strong enough yet to keep them airborne. As they tried to fly, they were blown back to the cliffs with the others hatchlings calling for their parents.

Then I saw a familiar look in Hiccup's eyes. She had an idea and we were just about to find out what it was.

"I think I know what we have just the thing to bring them with us." She said banking toward the sea stacks back at Dragon Island.

She stopped at one particular sea stack and landed on an old ship that had gotten stuck. "This is going to help us carry all the little ones with us. Help me get it back to the rookery." She said as she stared to push it loose.

I flew in close and pushed as hard as I could. It was stubborn but we eventually got it to budge and into the water and pushed it back to the rookery. Once on shore, she changed into her human form and searched the wreckage for anything she thought would make it easier for us to carry the boat. She found a lot of rope and tied it around the bow and what remained of the back. Even though she was now in her human form everyone understood what she had in mind. If we held the ropes, we could carry the wreck with the hatchlings in it like a carrying nest.

She changed back and instructed the parents to bring their young to the boat and get them to stay on. Hiccup and I took up the front

ropes and we led everyone back to Berk. It was slow going with the weight of the boat and all the hatchlings inside. By the time Berk was insight it was getting dark. But we made it back. From what we could see Meatlug's eggs had already hatched but at least we were home. We landed the wrecked boat and settled it in the middle of town.

Everyone was waiting anxious to see the newborn and were in total awe when they saw then crawl off the ship to find their parents while their parents rejoined their riders. Hiccup changed back and reunited with her father.

"Well done lass." Stoick said hugging his daughter tightly.

"Thanks Dad." Hiccup grunted trying to breath in the bear hug.

"Everyone, grab your dragons, to the Great Hall. We finally have something to celebrate." He announced as everyone raced to the Great Hall with their dragons close to them and their hatchlings in tow.

Everyone was so happy and celebrating the return of all the dragons and their new children. As I looked around, I still felt a small emptiness in my chest.

"Toothless, I know this must be really hard for you seeing all the other dragons with their new children. But I promise we will have our own when I am of age. I will do anything to keep you happy." Hiccup said as I turned to face her in her dragon form and she nudged me.

She put her head around my neck in a hug. I returned the hug and felt the warm feeling I always had when she was with me. I knew she would keep her promise, but that still didn't get rid of the empty feeling. But there was nothing neither I or even Hiccup could even do about it. I was just happy to have her right here with me.

## 30. Chapter 30

### Chapter 30

(Three months later)

"You're right Mildew. She'll cage them tonight and in the morning, Hiccup will send them off the island. I'm sorry lass." Stoick said facing his daughter.

All I had to do was look in her eyes and see how hurt she was. "Dad, we can't send them away, especially Toothless. If you send him away you'll only be putting the rest of the village in even more danger because you know what will happen if I lose control." Hiccup pleaded.

"I'm sorry Hiccup. But we'll figure something out, I'm sorry but they have to go." Stoick said walking away.

Hiccup looked at me and ran toward the forest. I raced after her and followed her into the forest. I could sense her heart racing and her

emotions rising faster. She was going to change and lose control at any second. I had to reach her. She stopped at the edge of the cove and sank to her knees.

I walked up behind her and nudged her arm. She looked at me and threw her arms around me. I wrapped my wings around us both. I could feel her salty tears racing down my underbelly and her cheeks growing hotter the more her sobs racked her body. I put her down and offered her to climb on my back but she backed up and changed into her dragon form.

"Toothless I am so sorry. I couldn't stop them from splitting us up again." She sobbed.

"It's not your fault Hiccup. And this is not the end, we'll find a way. For now, how about we take one last flight around the island. Just us." I offered.

"Alright." She said as her sobs died down.

We launched off the edge and raced through the sea stacks. We had been racing for months, each trying to out race the other to reach the other side. She won each time, but I could tell her heart wasn't in our racing. She was still sad about her father's decision and was afraid of losing me. Just as she had been since we both found our feeling for each other.

It started to get dark and we raced back to the Great Hall. She changed back and asked me to follow her. She settled with her friends. Normally they were lively chatting or discussing what to do for fun the next time they can step away from their families. But tonight all any of them could talk about was how much they were going to miss their dragon companions.

"We can't let that happen, Toothless is the love of my life and the only one I'll ever have." She whispered to herself.

I cooed as she rubbed her hand on my head, her hands were always so soft and warm. But my daydream was short lived.

"Oh, Toothless, I'm gonna miss you so much." I heard a voice say mockingly as it got closer.

We looked up, it was the old man from earlier, the one who had convinced Hiccup's father to send us away.

"You know what your mistake was, thinking dragons could be trained. A dragon's gonna do what a dragon's gonna do. It's their nature, and nature always wins." He said smugly as he walked away.

I could feel Hiccup's anger and frustration. It was a good thing the old man didn't know about her ability to change into one of my kind. Who knows what he would do if he knew. Presently a cold gust of air blew through the Great Hall and blew the fire out. I turned around and reignited it. The woman behind me thanked me. At least not all the humans were against us.

"You know what, Mildew's absolutely right. Come on love, I have an idea." She said as we raced out of the Great Hall.

I didn't know what she had in mind, but her plans had worked in the past, so all I could do was trust her to know what she was doing.

## 31. Chapter 31

### Chapter 31

Toothless and I flew past the village and met up with the others. I stopped them from closing the other dragons in the arena and explained my plan to them. They were a little uneasy because this was not what my father wanted but they all knew that I was not ready to let my Dad make his decision without seeing that the dragons could be taught.

I instructed the others to hide their dragons in the woods and I would take care of the rest. Everyone brought their dragons to the cove and I instructed the dragons to get some rest and that everything would make sense in the morning.

As much as I wanted Toothless to come home with me, he had to stay with the other dragons.

"I'll be alright my love, and if everything goes right tomorrow, we won't have to worry about being kept apart." He replied as he wrapped his neck around mine in a hug.

I changed into my human form and hugged him as tight as I could. I never wanted it to end, but we had to let go and I had to get home before my Dad got any ideas. The other trainers and I ran back to the village and went home. As I laid in bed, I got this tight nervous feeling in my chest. I knew what I was doing and I was scared, but I was more afraid of losing the one I love more. I closed my eyes and tried to convince myself that I was doing the right thing because I knew I was, but the uneasy feeling never went away.

\_I was playing in my room with my mother working on one of her tapestries. Suddenly we heard yelling from outside and a loud knock on the door.\_

\_My mother got up and grabbed me. She took me to the closet by my bed and closed the doors.\_

\_"Stay in here and don't come out." My mother said holding the doors.\_

\_He left me in the darkness and disappeared downstairs. I listened as I heard a man and my mother yelling and fighting. I peeked out and slowly crawled out and under my bed. I listened to the voices and what they were saying.\_

\_"We will find her Valhallarama, and when we do you can be sure that she won't be around much longer." I heard a harsh voice say to my mother as it got closer to the stairs.\_

\_Whoever it was, was coming up stairs and was looking for me. I wanted to get back in the closet and hide but it was too late. By the time I would have gotten, they would see me and I would be hurt. All I could do was stay put and stay quiet. I heard the man coming up and

I could feel my body shaking. I put my hands over my mouth to keep myself quiet and prayed to Thor that they wouldn't see me.\_

\_As the man came into view, I felt my body start to shake harder and my heart beat faster and faster. I was worried that he would hear it and find me. But just walked right past me and searched through everything. When he didn't see me, he left my room and went back down to my mother.\_

\_"Well, where did you hide her Valhallarama?" I heard the scary man ask her.\_

\_I didn't hear my mother answer. "Alvin isn't known for his patience, I suggest you tell him what he wants to know." I heard another man say to my mother.\_

\_Again, nothing.\_

\_"Kill her." I heard the scary man say.\_

\_I jumped out of my hiding place and screamed for them to stop. They looked up at me and had this evil glint in their eyes. As I looked at them, I couldn't find any hint of a soul in them. It was like they were lifeless demon puppets.\_

\_"Well, well, well, who do we have here?" the big scary man asked as he walked up the stairs and stood towering over me. "You're Stoick's little runt aren't ya?" he said as he reached down to grab me.\_

\_I slipped between his legs and ran down the stairs to my mother. She pushed the other man out of her way and held me close. The big scary man came back down and stood in front of my mother.\_

\_"Tell me Val, what is her name? Wait don't tell me, it's Hiccup isn't it? Of course, the old Viking tradition. A runt called a hiccup." He chuckled.\_

\_"If you want to hurt my daughter, you'll have to kill me first." My mother spat venomously.\_

\_"Don't get ahead of yourself. Your turn will come, but first, it's the runt's turn." He said reaching for me.\_

\_My father burst through the front door and grabbed the scary man and threw him into his friend. My mother pushed me towards the door.\_

\_"Sweetie, listen to me, I want you to run alright. Run into the woods and don't come out until your father or I come to find you." She said dragging me to the back of the house.\_

\_"Mommy, I'm scared." I said feeling my body shaking.\_

\_"Just go and hide my sweet, we'll handle this." She said with a smile.\_

\_I hugged her one more time and ran in the opposite direction into the woods. I heard my mother scream her battle cry. I ran as fast as I could and kept running until I thought my legs would fall off. I found a tree with a small cave under it. I crawled in and hunched

against the wall. I hugged my knees to my chest and felt my tears start to burn my eyes. I prayed that my mother and father would be okay and that we would be together again.\_

I woke up and jolt up in bed. I had a cold sweat running over my entire body. My body was shaking and I could barely breathe. My Dad came upstairs, and knelt down beside me bed.

"Hiccup, are you alright?" he asked.

When I could finally find my voice I answered, "Yeah, I'm fine."

He didn't seem convinced. "You want to talk about it?" he asked.

"It was that nightmare again, about the night Mom died. Why did Mom have to have run and hide myself? Why didn't she come with me?" I asked feeling the hot tears start to sting my eyes.

"I know you miss her, but there is nothing we can do. Your mother gave her life to protect yours and every day that I see you alive and safe, I tell myself that her sacrifice was not in vain. She would be proud of you for what you have done for our village." He said rubbing my back.

"Even that part about me being able to change into a Night Fury?" I asked with a weak giggle.

"Your mother would love you no matter what. I saw it in her eyes everyday she held you close." He said combing my hair with his fingers. "How about you go back to sleep? We have a lot to do tomorrow." He said going back down stairs. "Good night."

"Good night Dad." I said laying back down. 'Tomorrow, everything will be alright.' I reassured myself closing my eyes and falling back to sleep.

## 32. Chapter 32

### Chapter 32

My heart was racing as I watched my Dad and Gobber enter the arena. Everything went according to plan, but Mildew being as ungrateful as he was, ratted us out to my Dad and now our dragons were locked up behind us and we were standing in the middle of the arena waiting to see what my Dad was going to do to us.

I felt this overwhelming sense of guilt in my chest. I just wanted to stop my Dad from sending the dragons away for good. But now everyone was in trouble because of me and who knows what he had in mind for the dragons, especially Toothless.

'You all disobeyed my orders and there will be consequences." He said as he walked closer to us.

"I told you we were going to get in trouble. You never listen to me." Astrid whispered.

"Dad if anyone's going to get in trouble it should be me." I said stepping forward hoping to change my Dad's mind about punishing the

others. It was my idea so I should be the one to take the consequences.

"No you all had a hand in this." My Dad deadpanned.

I swore I could hear Mildew sneering in the background but all my thoughts were how we were going to get out of this one.

"You took over this place without asking, you released the dragons against my wishes. Things are going to change around here. That's whyâ€|"

"â€|You're getting a dragon training academy!" Gobber surprised us.

"Gobber, I wanted to tell them." My Dad complained.

My heart did a dance in my chest. I couldn't help but smile at everyone and think about what we had just done. We now had a place we could train our dragons and be out of everyone's way when we did so, as well as a place where Toothless could train me to control my Night Fury abilities.

"I'm sorry you're right, go ahead." Gobber offered.

"Well you told most of it." My Dad complained again.

"You can tell them the part about how proud you are of them."

"Gobber! Hiccup, well, what he said." Dad explained turning to us. "You've all made me proud. This dragon training academy, is for you." He said pushing on the lever releasing the dragons back to us.

Toothless and I rushed and held each other close. I listened to his heart and he listened to mine. I felt at ease knowing we had done a good thing and that now Toothless and I didn't have to worry about being torn apart again.

"Now all you have to do is train 'em." My Dad said warmly.

"Not a problem Dad. After all, I've got him." I said holding Toothless close. I heard Astrid clear her throat. "And them too." I said giggling.

Toothless and I went to bed that night happier than ever that we had succeeded. Now we had a place we could train and we could stay together.

### 33. Chapter 33

#### Chapter 33

(A month later)

I was flying through the clouds to get the feeling of mist in my wings. Hiccup was back at the academy helping the others learn to get along with their dragons. I loved flying with her, but sometimes I

just needed some time to myself.

I flew back to the academy and joined Hiccup and the others. It looked like everything was going great although Hiccup's cousin and the Fire One were still on awkward caring but still rather antagonistic behavior toward each other.

Hiccup was just helping Astrid finish designs for her saddle when she turned to leave. I turned to follow her but Astrid stopped me.

"We need you here Toothless. We have something we need to talk about Hiccup." She whispered.

I was curious about what they would want to about Hiccup to me, but not to her. But I didn't argue I just settled down and listened.

"Alright guys, we have a lot to talk about while Hiccup's gone and we don't have much time." She said as she paced in front of the other teens.

"Yeah it is." Fishlegs agreed.

"Wait what are you talking about?" The one blonde twin named Tuffnut asked.

As far as I could tell, the twins were not the sharpest rocks in the gorge. But even I was a little curious about what she was talking about.

"You know, tomorrow is Hiccup's birthday, she's turning fifteen." Fishlegs said turning to the twins.

'Her birthday, why didn't she tell me about it?' I asked myself.

"If it's so important, why didn't she say something before?" Snotlout asked clearly irritated.

"Well the thing is, Hiccup doesn't like to celebrate her birthday because her Mom was killed the day before her seventh birthday. After that, she acts like her birthday doesn't even exist." Astrid said.

"If this bothered you, why didn't you do something before?" Snotlout asked pointing at Astrid.

"Because all those years, I didn't think about it, I just noticed things but didn't really give them much thought until after Snoggletog. For the past few months I wondered what it must have been like for her but now I really want to do something for her. I mean she has done so much for us, the least we can do is try and help her celebrate her birthday." Astrid explained.

"I thought she didn't want to." The other blonde twin named Ruffnut interjected.

"That's why it's going to be a surprise. Stoick and Gobber are already setting it up in the Great Hall. All we have to do is keep Hiccup distracted and make sure she doesn't find out. And that is how Toothless is going to help us." Astrid explained pointing to me. I



raised an eyebrow.

'How am I going to help?' I thought.

"How is he going to help us with that?" Fishlegs asked.

"Because he's going to act like something is wrong and that the only way to help him is on another island. We will insist to come with her and when it's time, he act like all better and then when we come home, all we have to do is convince Hiccup to go up to the Great Hall. Stoick and Gobber will have everything ready by then. They said to have her ready by sunset. That's how long we have to keep her busy." Astrid explained.

I gave the plan some thought. It Sounded like it might work, but I felt bad about having to lie to the one I love to make it work. But I convinced myself that it was for a good cause. We all readied for Hiccup to come back. She entered the arena, I made a face that looked like I was in some discomfort and made a whine to get her attention.

"Toothless are you alright?" she asked kneeling next to me.

"He's been like that since he came back from his flight Hiccup. I think there's something wrong with him." Astrid said with concern in her voice.

Hiccup looked at me with worry in her eyes. She changed into her dragon form and began asking me questions.

"Toothless what's wrong?" she asked her voice heavy with worry.

"I think it's dragon heart. It's the organ that allows me to use magic and cats spells. I think it's almost drained of magic." I replied feigning pain. "If I don't return to the island where I was born to rejuvenate it, I'll lose my magic and whatever strength I have left, I'll die." I explained.

"I'll take you to the island, where is it, how do we get there?" she asked with determination in her voice.

"It's an island not far from Dragon Island. When you reach Dragon Island, head due west, there's island with a mountain with a water running out of a cave near the summit. That's where I was born." I explained weakly.

"Got it, don't worry my love, I'll save you. I promise." She said her voice strong with determination.

She changed back and explained what I had just told her to the other teens. I gave Astrid a wink and she winked back. I was proud of myself for the story I was able to come up with. There was no such thing as a dragon heart and the island I had just described to her was not where I was born. I was born at the rookery like all the others, but as long as she bought the story and we kept her busy long enough it would be worth it.

"Alright, Toothless is too weak to fly, so we'll use the boat I use on Snoggletog to bring the babies here and use that to carry him to the island." Hiccup said pacing going through her plan.

"Hiccup, we'll carry the ship. You should ride inside with Toothless, he's going to need you now more than ever." Astrid said.

"You're right," Hiccup sighed looking back at me. "Alright, let's get the boat and get your dragons ready." Hiccup instructed.

She stayed behind while the others got the boat ready and I managed to feign weakly walking to get on. She stayed in the haul with me while the others and their dragons carried us to the island I had described to her. She rubbed her hands up and down my hide the entire trip telling me that she was not going to let me die and that she was going to do whatever it took to save me.

I felt my heart flutter in my chest. I knew she would do anything for me, but I still felt bad about having to lie to her, but I reminded myself that it was for a good reason and that it would all be worth it in the end.

## 34. Chapter 34

### Chapter 34

Everything was going great, Hiccup had no idea what we were up to and she still believed that I needed her help. Once we reached the island, she changed into her dragon form and asked me how she could help me rejuvenate my dragon heart.

"I have to be in the cave at the mountain's summit by midday and drink from the waters of the falls. The waters will rejuvenate my dragon heart and keep me well strengthened for another century." I explained trying to keep it as believable as possible.

"Got it. I'll get you there." She said reaching to lift me on to her shoulders.

"No, I have to get there myself." I said stopping her.

"But you can barely even walk right now. How are you going to make it all the way up there?" she asked.

"I said I had to make the journey, I didn't say you couldn't be there when I need you." I said feigning to weakly stand.

Astrid and her dragon came in. "Hiccup, we better hurry. I thought I heard wolves coming."

Hiccup looked at me and let me lean against her for support. "Alright love, let's go. I'll help you get there. Just let me know when you need to rest." She said as we all started for the cave.

I felt a pang in my chest. Hiccup was really scared for my life and here I was pretending to be in danger just so her family can celebrate her birthday when she doesn't want to. Now I really did feel sick, I started wondering if I should tell her the truth, but then I remembered what everyone was putting into this for her and I held my tongue. All I could do was keep up my façade until I needed to and then after this was all over, I could tell her what was really going on and hopefully she would understand.

"Toothless, are you okay?" Hiccup said shaking me from my thoughts.

"I'm hanging in there. The cave shouldn't be much farther, just at the top of the mountain. That's where I was born." I said as Hiccup and I trudged while the others flew just above us.

"Once we get there, the others will help you to the top." She said as we got closer to the mountain's base.

"I thought I told youâ€¦!"

"You said you had to get there by yourself. You didn't say you couldn't have help." She said looking me in the eye with a look that told me she was not going to stop until she felt that I was safe.

Now I really felt guilty about lying but I kept reminding myself that it was for her birthday and that she would understand.

When we reached the base, she passed me off to Stormfly who carried me until she passed me on to Hookfang then Meatlug then the twin's Two-headed One they called Barf and Belch. Then when I was close to the summit I was passed back to Hiccup. She carried me the rest of the way to the cave and set me down near the entrance. I looked out over the side and saw that we only had to keep her busy awhile longer.

"Alright, what do you have to do now?" Hiccup asked shaking me from my thoughts again.

"I need to drink the waters from the waterfall at the time which I was born. In about an hour I just have to hold on 'til then." I said holding onto the act.

"Okay. Not much longer and you'll be safe." She said sounding like she as trying to calm down.

"Don't worry, it's almost over. Everything's going to be okay." I said hoping to calm her nerves. "I'll be fine."

It took a lot of convincing from not just me but also from the others for her to settle down, but she eventually settled down next to me and draped her wing over me. The others said they were heading back to the village to explain where she would be for a while. Hiccup and I promised to fly back when I was ready to fly.

When we were alone, we waited for the time to come. We watched the sun as it grew rosier and brighter the closer it got to the horizon. When it was time, Hiccup leaned me onto her shoulder and helped me over to the waterfall. She let me go long enough for me to tilt my head into the falls and drink what I let her believe was what I needed to save my 'dragon heart'. Once I was done, she supported me again and we headed back in.

"Okay, it will take a while for it to work, but I will be okay in a few minutes." I said as I got comfortable on the cave floor.

"I'm so glad. I was afraid I was going to lose you just like I lost

my mother." She said rubbing her head against mine.

"I have wondered this for a while now, but what happened to your mother?" I asked.

"It's not a night I like to remember. I was upstairs in my room playing while my mother was working on her tapestry. Everything had been quiet, until we heard shouting and someone trying to break into our house. My mother hid me in my closet and told me to stay in. I heard fighting and shouting go n down stairs. I was too scared to go down, but I left the closet and hid under my bed. The one fighting my mother threatened to kill my mother and I gave myself away and they almost had me.

"My mother protected me and my father bought us enough time for my mother to get me out of my house and for me to hide in the woods. My mother told me to hide in the woods until she or my father came for me. I ran until I found a tree with a hollow base and hid there. The entire time I was hiding I was praying that my parents would be okay. But when my father found me he told me that my mother had been killed trying to protect me.

"To make matters worse, my birthday was the next day, today in fact. Instead of celebrating my birthday the next day we spent the day arranging my mother's funeral. I haven't wanted to celebrate my birthday since because I haven't felt like I deserve it. My mother is dead because of me." She told me with tears in her eyes.

"I'm so sorry. I didn't know how much it hurt." I said draping my wing over her.

"I miss her so much. Every night, after she would sing to me, she look out my window and say to me a quote form one of her favorite poems, 'As you look to the stars above always know that you are loved'."

"Such a beautiful saying." I said nudging her head.

"It was the poem my father said to my mother when they were married. He said it as his vow that he would love her forever."

"Well now I know where you were blessed with your loyalty to your emotions. Your father raised you well, despite the neglect of father-daughter connection."

"I know." She said leaning against me.

## 35. Chapter 35

### Chapter 35

While we waited for me to supposedly get better, we watched the sun as it set and I never thought a sunset could get any more beautiful. As I watched it, I glanced at Hiccup I saw the light dance on her scales and it made her look so beautiful I thought I would melt if I looked much longer. The way it made her scales shine ebony with the slightest hints of violet and the way it made the emerald in her eyes shine like the most precious of gems.

Hiccup noticed I was staring. "Is something wrong Toothless?"

I didn't answer, all I could do was lean down toward her. "Toothless?" she asked as I got closer to her.

We were only inches apart, then before I could second guess myself, I closed the distance between us and felt the heat of her blush cross her face. Her lips felt so soft and she tasted of winter roses and the mist on a mountain on a crisp winter day. It was such a beautiful taste. Hiccup didn't fight, she returned the kiss and wrapped her wings around me in a hug. We remained this way for a few minutes and when we finally broke apart, I looked out and saw it was time for us to leave.

"We should probably get back." I said feeling awkward about what we had just shared.

"Yeah, are you feeling okay?" she said standing up.

"Yeah, I can fly." I said getting up.

We walked to the cave entrance and shared one last glance then took off for home. The flight home was awkward for both of us. Neither of us said a word, and I knew why. I had kissed her for the first time since we both confessed we loved each other. It was awkward for both of us and neither of us knew how to react. All we knew was that I had kissed her and that she had returned the kiss.

When we returned to the village, Hiccup changed into her human form and we started to make our way back to her house. We were almost at the front door when Astrid came running.

"Hiccup, your father and Gobber are looking for you, they want to see you in the Great Hall." She said winking at me.

"Okay, I'm coming." She said trying to hide her awkward feelings.

Astrid winked at me and I winked back. Hiccup started to make her way to the Great Hall and Astrid and I followed suit. When Hiccup opened the doors, everyone yelled her surprise. She looked around and looked like she was about to cry. From the smell of her tears, she was crying from joy.

Roses were wound around the pillars and were strewn across the ceiling. The center table was lined with mutton, fish and all of her favorite foods. Candles burned on the table and they smelled of the mint she always put in her hair when she washed every morning. The Great Hall never looked more beautiful.

"I don't know what to say." Hiccup said wiping her tears away. "Thank you, all of you." She said turning to everyone.

The festivities went on until the early hours of the morning. I don't think I had ever seen Hiccup so happy since we were able to be together when we ended the war.

When it was all over, Hiccup and I went for a flight around the island. We stopped at the cove to have a little time to ourselves.

"So now I figured it out. All that about dying from a depleted dragon heart was just a way to get me away while my Dad and Gobber set up this celebration." She said resting against me.

"Yes. I'm sorry I lied to you. I hated it but I knew it would all be worth it in the end and hopefully you would understand why I had to." I said apologizing.

"I do understand, and I forgive you, more than forgive you. All this time, I never wanted to celebrate my birthday and now everyone went through all this to help me celebrate my birthday, I have never been so happy in my life." She said

"I'm glad. I'm so happy I was able to help you find happiness after all these years of pain." I said rubbing my head against hers.

We remained that way for a few minutes then we got up and returned home to the village. Once we were home, Hiccup got into bed and fell asleep as soon as she hit the pillow. I laid awake for a few minutes thinking about what had happened back on the island earlier that day. I had kissed Hiccup and she kissed me back. We had just had our first kiss. This rattled in my head for a while until my eyes got heavy and I too fell asleep.

## 36. Chapter 36

### Chapter 36

(two months later)

I felt the wind rushing around me as I fell through the sky. I was falling, but I wasn't scared. I knew Toothless would catch me, he always does. I righted myself and landed safely in the saddle.

"Good catch love." We pulled back and met up with the others.  
"Alright it's your turn, jump." I said turning to Fishlegs.

"I don't want to jump!" he said reluctantly.

"You have to believe she's going to catch you. It's a trust exercise." I said trying to help him understand the purpose of this training.

"I like to do my trusting on the ground thank you very much." He said stubbornly.

"Like this Chicken-legs." Snotlout sneered as he flipped off of Hookfang.

Hookfang just kept going like he didn't notice. Toothless got his attention and directed to the fact that Snotlout was plummeting to the ground.

"Not feeling the trust!" Snotlout called out.

Hookfang dove after him, but despite their efforts, he crashed into the house of someone I hoped we wouldn't have to deal with for a while, Mildew's. They flew back out and crashed the roof again doing

so.

"You'll pay for this!" Mildew called out to us.

I got a tight uneasy feeling in my chest. "Something tells me we're gonna hear about this." I groaned.

I was right, that night, my Dad showed me a broken shingle.

"Shingle again? Didn't we have roofing material for dinner last night?" I joked weakly hoping to lighten the tense atmosphere, but my Dad was not amused. "It was an accident Dad. I'm sure Mildew is making sound worse than it is." I said realizing I was not going to make things any easy just by joking.

"A dragon and a huge obnoxious boy crashed through his roof, twice." My Dad deadpanned.

"Okay sure it sounds bad if you're gonna stick to the facts." I said feeling the tight uneasiness getting heavier.

"Of all the houses on the island, a dragon had to crash through Mildew's. You know he hates dragons more than anyone else." He scolded.

"I know, you might want to talk to him about his attitude." I said hoping to change the subject, but with my Dad in this situation, there was no changing anything.

"Listen to me Hiccup, I gave you the responsibility of training those dragons. Everyone knows that, all eyes are upon you lass. Whatever those beasts do reflects on you and whatever you do reflects on me." He said sounding like he was under as much pressure as I was and in a way he was.

"I'm sorry Dad, you're right." I said getting up feeling defeated.

"You and your friends are going to go back to Mildew's house and fix that roof, without your dragons." He said pointing to Toothless.

"You caught a break there, love." I said stroking his head.

"Uh, not so fast. Aren't you forgetting something?" he said getting my attention again. "It's boot night, they need to be aired out." He said handing me his boots.

It really wouldn't have bothered me if not for the smell, which with my new sense of smell from my Night Fury side made worse. Not even Toothless could stand it.

"I think it's gonna take more than air." I groaned.

I opened the door and placed down on the front step then went back inside. After leaving the boots out for the night, I went upstairs and laid down to go to sleep. I looked over at Toothless's bed and saw he was there, but not really looking tired. Not really sure what to do, I got up and changed into my dragon form.

"Are you alright Toothless?" I asked settling down close to him.

"I'm fine. I just haven't been able to stop thinking about what happened on that island two months ago, you know the kiss." He answered awkwardly.

I felt a heavy blush across my cheeks, thank Thor my scales hide the redness. "What about it?" I asked.

"It's just, that was our first kiss and after everything we have been through, of all the times we could've kissed, we chose then. I was just wondering if it meant anything, to you." He explained.

To be honest, I didn't know how to answer. I felt that it meant something, I just couldn't put my finger on it. And I'm sure Toothless felt the same way. But when I opened my mouth to answer, I couldn't find the right words to say.

"Iâ€¦uh wellâ€¦I justâ€¦I mean I felt that it did, I just don't know what? You know I love you, but I just never kissed anyone before you and at the time, I didn't know how to feel about it. I feel that it meant something, I just can't place it." I explained awkwardly.

"I understand. You don't have to tell me here and now because I'm in the same position. I felt it meant something too, I just can't figure it out." He said resting his head on mine. "There'll be plenty of time to figure it out later. Right now, you'd better get some rest, you and your friends have a roof to repair tomorrow." He said with a small grin on his face.

I gave him a small shove then walked over to my bed and changed back to my human form and went to bed. I laid awake for a few minutes and then closed my eyes. I didn't really fall asleep until a little later, but I graciously welcomed it. I was going to need all my energy tomorrow to fix the crank old man's roof.

## 37. Chapter 37

### Chapter 37

The day never went exactly as we planned. Instead of waking up to go fix Mildew's roof, I woke up having to hunt down everyone's boots. And where we found them made my heart sink. They were piled around Barf and Belch in the academy.

"So there's a bunch of boots piled around a Zippleback, that doesn't meanâ€¦" my Dad showed me a tattered boot. "â€¦okay fine he took the boots." I admitted defeated.

Everyone was upset and Mildew was only making things worse. "How long before something is done about these creatures Stoick, how much more can we stand?" he yelled getting the crowds attention.

Everyone was agreeing with him again, thankfully Gobber stepped in. "Listen to yourselves, 'my feet are cold.' You're Vikings everything is cold. I'll fix your boots for you, you'll be back to work in no time." He said appealing to their pride as Vikings.



"You all heard Gobber, you'll be getting your boots back as good as new." My Dad said calming everyone's frustration.

I heaved a sigh of relief, but Mildew wasn't done. "That's it, no consequence for these dragons?" he questioned in disappointment.

"They took our boots Mildew. The world isn't coming to an end." My Dad deadpanned.

"Oh, don't be so sure, dragons are wild beasts. There's no telling what else they'll do behind our sleeping backs." Mildew argued darkly.

I wasn't going to just stand there and let him talk about Toothless like that. "They don't destroy things on purpose." I argued. "But you do have a point Mildew, they are wild animals and they need us to keep an eye on them and rest assured we will do just that." I didn't like saying it, but I couldn't let Mildew know about my secret.

Everyone in the village knew what I could do, but Mildew never found out and Toothless and I planned to keep it that way. Who knows what he would do if he found out.

I whispered for Barf and Belch to leave and as they did, I noticed something strange about the footprints. Barf's and Belch's were deeper than the ones we found, no deeper than mine. But I had other things to think about, like how to make sure the dragons don't get blamed for anything else again. I had an idea.

I asked the others to meet me at the landing outside the forge. "We're going on night patrol." I said revealing my idea.

Needless to say there were some who were not so pleased with the idea. "Guys, we have to do this, you heard Mildew, he wants the dragons banished." I said getting their attention about the seriousness of the situation.

"Permission to shoot first and ask questions later." Ruffnut asked.

"Permission to skip the question." Tuffnut asked.

"We're just patrolling, no one is shooting anyone." I said quickly knowing what they had in mind.

"I have a question, what's fun about that?" Tuffnut asked disappointed.

"It's not supposed to be fun it's a Hiccup idea." Astrid answered.

"Exactly." I said but then realized what she was implying. "What?"

That night, I remained in my human form and rode in the saddle to patrol the village with Toothless. Just in case Mildew saw us. Everything seemed okay. No one was out late and all the dragons seemed to be okay.

"Well Mildew will be pleased to know what dragons do at night, they sleep like everyone else." I commented to Toothless.

We spent the rest of the night patrolling the forests and around the village again and again to make sure we didn't miss anything. It was almost day break when we were called to the Great Hall and what we saw made my heart skip a beat.

## 38. Chapter 38

### Chapter 38

The Great Hall was a mess, there were claw marks all over the tables, the pillars and the tapestries were shredded. None of this sat right with me, we were up all night and every dragon was asleep with every pass we made through the village. But Fishlegs wasn't helping things when my Dad asked who could've done it.

"Looks like a dragon to me." He said not realizing he was making it worse.

"We don't know for sure, Fishlegs." I said hoping he'd take a hint.

"Sure we do, look at these claw marks, it was obviously a Monstrous Nightmare. That spacing of the talons is dead on." He said apparently not getting it.

"Once again, thank you Fishlegs." I said feeling very annoyed and worried and Snotlout didn't help in the least once he showed that he obviously had something to tell us. "Okay, what happened Snotlout?" I asked getting a really bad feeling in the pit of my stomach.

"While I was detaining a suspect, who wasn't showing sufficient respect to the sashâ€¦"

"I think I show sufficient to a sash that says, DUMB." Gobber said pointing at him.

"We gotta change that name." Astrid sighed.

"Anyways, as I was questioning said suspect, Hookfang may have, and I'm not saying he did, but it is possible he wandered off for a fewâ€¦"

"Seconds?" Ruff pleaded.

"Minutes?" Tuff pleaded back.

They were clearly as worried about this situation as the rest of us and hoped for just a little good news. No such luck.

"Hours." Came Snotlout's answer.

We all groaned knowing that this didn't look good to begin with and now with Snotlout's story, it only made things worse. And it only got all the more worse when Mildew came in.

"Oh no, it's true, the Great Hall. So many memories, my three weddings, their three funerals. Oh the funerals." He said getting that look on his face that said he enjoyed the funerals more than the weddings. But he was Mildew, that's kind of what you could expect from him.

But I had other things to worry about, like how was I supposed to defend the dragons' innocence when all the damage points to Hookfang.

"A dragon must have gone a rampage. I hate to say it Stoick but you're gonna have toâ€¦" Gobber said turning to us.

"I know what has to be done Gobber." My Dad finished.

"So do I." Mildew jumped in.

My Dad turned to me. "Starting tonight and every night, I want all the dragons out in the academy under lock and key." He instructed me and I knew he was talking about Toothless too.

"This just doesn't make any sense. A dragon wouldn't come in here and just destroy the place, I mean, none of the food was even touched." I argued, but I could already tell there was no changing his mind.

H and the others left leaving me and the other riders feeling defeated and hurt, me most of all. Now Toothless was going to have to stay locked up with the other dragons as if nothing we did changed anything. When I told him about it, he could tell I was no happier about it than he was, but there was nothing we could do until we could prove that the dragons were innocent.

"I'm so sorry love, I failed you, I know I did. I won't even ask for you to forgive me, I don't deserve it." I said looking away from too ashamed to look at him.

"It's not your fault, you did everything you could and I'm proud of you for that. We just have to work harder to prove that my people didn't do anything wrong." He said lifting my head to face him with his tail. "We'll get through this my love, I know we will. We always do." He said wrapping his wing around me.

That evening, I rode Toothless to the academy. Normally, we would have been excited to get started on training, but tonight we were not training, we locking the dragons up like nothing changed since the war. Once everyone was at the academy, every one worked getting their dragons settled down for the night. There was a lot of finger pointing and blame going around about whose fault it was, but I didn't think that there was any one in our group to blame. Someone wanted the dragons to take all the blame and make me look like I can't keep them under control.

"I don't think a dragon wrecked the Great Hall, or stole the boots." I said speaking what was on my mind.

"None of us wants to believe it either Hiccup, but you saw the proof." Astrid said.

"What proof? You saw the footprints too, they were supposed to be made by a Zippleback, but they were no deeper than mine. Look at

these, I could lie down in them." I argued gesturing to a print in front of me.

Everyone wasn't exactly being supportive.

"Okay well, how do explain the Great Hall?" Astrid asked quizzically.

As if on cue, Hookfang began throwing a temper-tantrum. "Snotlout do something about him please. We're trying to think over here." I sighed. "Snotlout." I sighed again.

"I'm not the boss of him. He always does that when he gets angry." He said matter of factly.

Then it hit. "â€|or goes on a rampage," I whispered in thought. "That's how I can explain the Great Hall!" I exclaimed jumping into the saddle. "I've got to talk to my Dad about this." I said flying out of the academy.

## 39. Chapter 39

### Chapter 39

It was always hard to tell what Hiccup was thinking once she got an idea in her head, but that's what I loved about her. How she was always willing to find ways to make things better even when it seemed hopeless.

She and I flew towards the Great Hall, once there, she asked me to wait outside. I understood why, it might not be the best idea for me to be where there was a supposed dragon incident earlier that day.

"I'll be right back." She said before closing the door.

I sat down and rested while she went in to talk with her father. She was only gone for a minute when I heard something not far from the Great Hall. I not sure if I should follow it, but if it was a threat, I had to see what it was. I followed where I had seen a strange figure go through a door. Once inside, the figure was gone. I heard a window bang close, I looked but it looked like it had just been blown by the wind. I tried to get a closer look but something else caught my attention, the smell of something burning. I turned my head and saw someone had lit a wick and it was about to explode a barrel. I only had enough time jump back and leap out the doors.

The building was consumed in flames, I ran to find Hiccup to warn her, but everyone was already arriving.

"The armory!" Hiccup's father cried. "Grab some buckets!" he yelled as everyone scrambled to save the building.

If it was they kept their weapons then they were going to need us more than ever. But things didn't turn out so great. Someone said they saw me set the armory on fire and I felt my stomach sink. Hiccup looked at me in disbelief. She knew me better than that, but no one was willing to listen to her given how thing had been for the past few days.

Everyone did the best they could to save the armory, but it wasn't enough. It was gone within an hour. Hiccup tried desperately to defend me, but no was having any of it, not even her father.

"These dragons have done too much damage. It's no longer safe to have them on Berk, I want them gone." He ordered her.

"What!" Hiccup cried out.

I felt her heart miss a beat. She was scared and hurt, just five months ago she and I had to prove she could keep the rest of the dragons in line and now her father was asking her to send all the dragons, including me, away knowing the risk he was taking in doing so. But I knew Hiccup was afraid for different reasons.

She feared losing me because she was afraid of being alone again. Even when surrounded by her friends, she felt alone. As a result, every time we were separated, she had nightmares about the night she lost her mother and feared having to go through them again.

Things didn't look good for her right now either. Even her friends felt that it was over and just left her to feel the guilt of the fact she had not been able to save us. I stood by her and she turned to me threw her arms around my neck. Her tears ran down my body and I knew it was best to just let her cry for now.

"I'm so sorry my love." She cried between sobs. "I tried everything and now you and all the others dragons are being sent away. I failed."

"No you didn't." I said rubbing my paw up and down her back. "I didn't do it."

"I know you didn't butâ€¦" she said letting go and wiping her tears

"No I mean I think someone in the village was. Just before the armory burned down, I saw a burning rope in a barrel. I don't know who did it, but I know you'll figure it out." I said draping my wing over her.

We went to the house and settled down for the night. Instead of sleeping in her bed, she slept in mine next to me. I could tell she was really scared. I wrapped my wing over her and rested my head next to hers and fell into an uneasy sleep.

## 40. Chapter 40

### Chapter 40

I couldn't sleep, I was losing the love of my life, the only one who never gave up on me and never lost hope in me. Toothless gave me everything I ever wanted and now I was losing him, probably forever.

'No, I can't give in to it, I will prove the dragons are innocent.' I thought to myself. 'I will find out who did it.'

It then I thought about something Mildew had sneered at me after the armory burned down.

'See what happens when you leave your dragon all alone to wait outside.'

I really thought about it, but my eyes were getting too heavy to stay awake. I closed my eyes and settled even closer to Toothless. This was going to be the last time he and I would be able to snuggle for a while.

I felt my Dad shaking me awake. Toothless wasn't next to me, I jumped out looking for him, Dad told me he was waiting for me outside with the others. I changed to my human form and just walked past my Dad and out the door not bothering to say good bye. I met Toothless out front and slowly place the saddle on his back.

"I can't believe this really happening." I heard Astrid say behind me.

I didn't say anything, I couldn't find the right words to say to anyone that morning. For the first time, everyone wanted to talk to me, but this time, I couldn't talk back. I wanted to talk, I wanted to tell everyone how I was feeling, but I couldn't find any words to say to anyone, not even Toothless.

We just mounted our dragons and took off for Dragon Island. My Dad and Gobber sailed a ship not far from behind us, we were going to need some way to get home after we left our dragons on the island. No one said anything on the way to the island. All I could do the entire way there was stroke Toothless' head when Dragon Island came into sight.

My heart felt heavier than it did when I learned that I might not have ever been able to turn human again. This time, I still had my human form, but I was losing the important one in my life. When we landed on Dragon Island, everyone took their time removing their saddles and saying good bye. Me and Toothless took the longest because this hurt us more than anyone could ever understand.

My hands and finger fumbled as I undid the saddle. When it finally came off, I placed my hand on his face.

"I'll be back for you, I promise." I said with my voice cracking.

Before I left, I leaned down and placed a small kiss on his head. I didn't know when I was going to see him again and I still didn't know if our kiss on the other island meant anything, but the one I gave Toothless did.

It meant that this wasn't good bye forever and that we would see each other again. But that didn't stop the tears from forming in my eyes. I turned to leave for the ship. Toothless was behind me trying to follow.

"No love, you've gotta stay here and take care of the other dragons." I said holding my hand out.

Toothless looked at me like he was hoping to change my mind and

convince me to stay. "It's gonna be okay Toothless, trust me." I said my voice close to cracking completely to sobs.

Toothless brought his head up to my hand. I felt a warm pulse shot through my body like Toothless had just wrapped his wings around me as he always did to hug when I was human. I couldn't stand it anymore, I kneeled down and wrapped my arms around him and held him as tight as I could in my human form. The tears I had been trying to keep from falling had become too heavy. They fell down my cheeks and slide down Toothless' scaly face.

When I finally let him go, I put the saddle down under a small ledge near the entrance. It meant that I would be back and that when I was, he and I would take to the skies as if it never happened. I finally met the others at the ship and we shoved off from Dragon Island. The farther we got, the heavier my chest felt.

When I could no longer see the island, it felt like someone had punched a hole in my chest and that I had left a piece of myself back on that island. But I had other things on my mind and Astrid was right next to me for me to talk to.

"You know there's something Mildew said that I can't stop thinking about, he said, 'See what happens when you leave your dragon to wait outside' he knew Toothless wasn't with me just before the armory fire." I said quizzically.

"So?" she questioned.

"So, so he lives on the other side of the island, what was he doing in town and how would he know where we were before the fire?" I explained.

"You really think he set that fire?"

"I think he did all of it and I think he did it so my Dad would get rid of all the dragons." I said explaining what I was thinking.

"That's a pretty serious accusation. How are you going to prove it?" Astrid asked.

"I don't know, but I have to. I promised Toothless I would come back for him and you know if I make a promise I never break that promise." I said with my determination growing stronger knowing that I now had a chance to prove the dragons were innocent and I wasn't going to stop until Toothless and I were back together.

## 41. Chapter 41

### Chapter 41

Everyone seemed to forget about the dragons. It seemed that that's the way that everyone wanted it. After we got back to Dragon Island, I had to fix Mildew's roof by myself. As the leader of the Dragon Academy and the bridge between dragons, everyone saw it as my fault, so naturally, it was my punishment to fix what the dragons had, supposedly, destroyed.

While I was working I had seen it as an opportunity to snoop around the old man's house. There, I found exactly what I was looking for, proof that Mildew had done it all. I had found a pair of Zippleback feet and a staff with Monstrous Nightmare talons on it. These were the things he had used to frame the dragons. Unfortunately, I never got the chance to use them against him. Because once I found them, I heard Mildew coming and had to put them back and hide. And once he opened the curtain that he had hidden them behind, he took them out and tossed them into the ocean just over the cliff.

But it didn't matter, I now knew for sure that it was Mildew. As I watched him throw those things into the ocean, I felt a flaming hatred burn in my chest. I was getting too angry, I had to calm down, if I didn't I would change into my dragon form and Mildew would find out my secret.

I jumped down from the roof and ran for the woods. I kept running until I reached the cove where Toothless and I spent so much time together. My chest was burning so hot I thought it would burn me from the inside out. My anger was growing and I knew why, Mildew had lost me the only one who had ever given me everything I had ever wanted just by teaching me and not giving up, the only one I thought I would ever love, the only one I knew I would ever love. I felt my dragon form coming, and I couldn't stop it.

I changed and everything went dark for a split second, but I managed to regain control at the last possible second, because I remembered I had to keep control, if I ever wanted to see Toothless again. If I lost control when Toothless wasn't with me, who knows what I would do when I can't even remember who I am.

After I managed to gather myself and calm down enough that I wouldn't change, I went back to the village. I took my own time getting there, I wanted to make sure that I wouldn't lose it at the last second. By the time I got home, it was almost sundown. I walked in through the front door and saw my Dad sitting by the fire pit. I walked past him and just went up to my room without a word and Dad made no effort to try talk to me. Part of me was hoping he would, but the other part knew that he knew that I didn't want to talk right now. He was the one who made the call to send the dragons and Toothless back to Dragon Island, despite my pleas and knowing what it would do to me.

I tried to lay down in my bed, but it just felt so empty. I looked over at Toothless' empty bed. I felt a void in my chest, the same I felt the night I lost my Mom. Ever since I met Toothless, that void didn't feel so empty any more. Toothless had filled it, by just by being the one I could turn to, by being the shoulder I could cry on when I needed someone to turn to, just as my mother was.

I got out of bed and knelt by Toothless' bed. I ran my hand over the top, it was still warm. I laid my head down on it and felt the warmth that Toothless had left behind. It wasn't the same, but it did feel a little better. My eyes grew heavy and I fell asleep kneeling by the love of my life's bed.

When I opened my eyes, I was in my bed under the covers. At first I thought my Dad had put me in bed, but my dragon nose caught a hint of Toothless' scent. That's when I knew, Toothless had come back to be with me. He had put me in bed and stayed with me until it wasn't safe



for him to stay. I knew he would never give up. I was still scared, what if Toothless had been caught.

But I felt a warm pulse grip my heart and it assured me that Toothless had been there and that he was back safe on Dragon Island. I felt a tear slide down my face, I didn't know if was from sadness of happiness.

But what I did know was that I wasn't going to stop until I proved the dragons especially my love were back home where they belonged.

I got up and washed up. After I left my house, I thought I could find the others at their houses, but they were all at the Academy. I was touched that they hadn't forgotten, but my heart broke when I saw the emptiness in their faces, even Astrid's. I told others what I had found and where we might find the things Mildew had in his house. We went to the beach hoping to find them washed up on shore.

As we searched I looked out over the ocean hoping Toothless was looking out over it just like I was, waiting to see me coming over the horizon to tell him that dragons were welcome back to Berk, waiting for me to return to his embrace and to be with him forever.

I was interrupted by my cousin's groan of boredom.

"We've been here for hours and we haven't found anything." He exasperated.

"We've been here for ten minutes and you've done nothing but build that." I corrected pointing to his sculptor.

"That is Snotlout Manor, and all I need now is a queen." He said trying to woo Astrid again.

Astrid groaned in disgust. Everyone was getting distracted and I wasn't going to have it.

"Come on you guys, I'm telling you Mildew framed our dragons. I saw dragon feet in Mildew's house and I watched him throw them into the ocean." I cried hoping to get them back on task.

"I don't mean to be Norbert the negative, but the ocean is really, really vast and our chances of finding those dragon feet are about as good as Snotlout and Astrid's." Fishlegs said crushing my argument.

"Don't go there." Astrid interrupted.

"Going nowhere." Fishlegs cringed.

"Look Fishlegs is right, even if Mildew did throw them in the ocean their not gonna just wash up on shore here." Astrid supporting his argument.

I was starting to feel let down when I heard Snotlout say something that sparked my hope again.

"I found it!" he shouted.

"Great!" I cried. "You were sayingâ€|" I said turning to Astrid.

But then my hope diminished when I saw what he had been talking about. It was his old bludgeon. I felt as if a hole had been punched in my chest, but I wasn't ready to give up.

"Just keep looking." I sighed.

It had only been one day and I already felt like I hadn't seen Toothless in years, and I was feeling the void in my chest getting bigger and more painful the more I thought about how I couldn't prove the dragons were innocent in time and now the love of my life was on Dragon Island waiting for me to bring him and all the other dragons home. And I wasn't ready to give up just yet.

## 42. Chapter 42

### Chapter 42

We continued to search the beach until late afternoon. After wards we all went home. When I got home, I confronted my Dad about what I had seen in Mildew's house. But again it was going to take a lot to convince my Dad about the dragon's innocence especially since the only evidence that could do just that was sitting at the bottom of the ocean somewhere.

"I know you're upset about the dragons lass, but you're gonna need evidence to accuse a man of high treason." My Dad said dismissing my argument.

I sighed and left the house again feeling more defeated than ever. I felt a little bit better to see Astrid there. We took a walk on the outskirts of the village. We thought we could get each other to think about something else but this was too close to heart for us and all we could talk about was our dragons.

"Astrid, we'll prove Mildew did it. We have to if we ever want to see our dragons again." I said promising her that I wasn't giving up yet.

"I just hope they're all okay." She sighed clearly thinking of Stormfly.

But I could see that something else had caught her eye. "Why would one of our ships be anchoring there?" she asked pointing to a ship beside a sea stack off the cliff.

I took out my spy glass to get a closer look, and what I saw made my heart skip a beat. "It's not one of our ships. I've got to tell Dad, come on." I said with fear in my voice and leading Astrid back to my place to warn my Dad about what we had seen.

The Outcasts were invading our shores.

## 43. Chapter 43

### Chapter 43

It had been only one day and already felt like an eternity since I saw Hiccup. I had flown back to see her at least once before saying goodbye for a while. I had managed to leave the island before the sun rose and any one could see me.

I paced through the cave and tried to get her off my mind, but ever since I left Berk earlier that morning, she was all I could think about. The sounds of fighting snapped me from my thoughts and I ran out to see what was going on.

The Flame One and the Two Headed One were at it again, this was really getting annoying.

"That's enough!" I shouted.

They didn't protest they just went their separate ways. After they were gone, I ran to where Hiccup had left her saddle. It still had her scent on it. I nudged it and thought about how she had smiled when I carried her to her bed that night. It was warm and made me feel like I was doing the right thing for her.

I moved to a ledge overlooking the ocean. I didn't expect her to be coming right then, but still I couldn't help but to stand there and keep watch. I was patient in her lessons to be a Dark One, I could wait for her to come back, she promised me she would and if I knew anything about her it's that she always keeps her promises.

I spent the rest of the day patrolling the island and hoping to see any sign of Hiccup and the others coming back for us. Even if was pointless to expect them to return after just one day, if I did hope for the smallest miracle, I couldn't hope at all.

When it was late, I went to back to the cave and just settled in a hollow close to the entrance. Far enough that no one could see me, but close enough that I could still see out over the ocean.

\_I saw Hiccup walking up the beach. I ran to meet her, and she turned to face me. As she turned, I saw what I had been waiting for, she was pregnant.\_

\_"Is our baby okay" I said knowing she couldn't understand me right now, but it was like all we had to do was look in each other's eyes and we would know what the other is saying.\_

\_"The baby's fine. It won't be much longer." She said placing her hand on my head.\_

\_I nudged her stomach and felt the life growing ever stronger inside her. Our child was going to be so strong just like their mother.\_

I was startled awake by the sound of a ship beaching on the shore. Had Hiccup come back for us like she promised? I ran out the entrance and walked up down the beach to meet her. There were others with her, but at the time I didn't care, I was too focused on my mate finally here.

I pounced her and pinned her to the ground and passionately licked her cheek.

"I missed you too." She giggled. "Look we'll catch up later, right

now, follow my lead." She whispered. "You cannot defeat me, you dirty dragon. I am the Dragon Conqueror." She shouted weakly.

I could sense something was wrong. It had to have something to do with the other humans on the beach, she was trying to fool them. We made our way back to the saddle she had hidden. Once there, I held my wings up so no one would see what she was doing.

"Hey what are you doing with that dragon?" I heard a harsh gruff voice behind us.

Once the saddle was in place, I turned revealing Hiccup in the saddle on my back. "By the way, it's not really Dragon Conqueror, it's Dragon Trainer." She said full of determination. "Now" she whispered signaling me to take off.

I made a small bound and then took off into the air. The humans on the beach stared in awe at what they saw. A human on a dragon, I was hoping that these humans didn't know about her dragon form. But I didn't have time to think about that because then we were too busy not being shot down.

When I saw the arrows coming at us, I almost felt like there was nothing I could do. But then, a blaze of fire allowed me to sigh with relief.

It was Astrid and Stormfly. They had come back for us. But why had Hiccup come first with the humans that had tried to shoot us down? Questions for another time, we had other things to worry about.

Hiccup's father and the other humans from the village took out the other humans' catapults giving us an opening to attack, but as soon as we came in close, Astrid fell off Stormfly and onto their ship.

We tried to get in close to get her but the most menacing human with the enemies grabbed her and now they had a way to make sure we couldn't strike without hurting our friend.

"Hold your fire, he's got Astrid." Hiccup instructed the others.

But as if on cue, the Flame One and his rider blasted fire narrowly missing the ship.

"What are you doing?" she cried.

"I heard you say fire." The rider answered.

"I said hold your fire." Hiccup responded frustrated.

"See, you said it again."

"No, he's right!" Hiccup's father called from below. "Fire again Hiccup, all of you!"

I could sense Hiccup was getting an idea. "Everyone, fire into the water." Hiccup instructed the others.

We all flew in setting fire to the close ship setting fire the water

watching turn to a thick fog like vapor. Now Hiccup and I were in our environment. We flew in close and managed to grab Astrid as she jumped from the ship.

Hiccup reunited her with Stormfly and turned back to the ship as we heard her father call out to her.

"Now Hiccup, Burn the ship!"

"Here we go guys, hit 'em with everything you got!" Hiccup called as we rained our fire over the ship as the enemy humans jumped overboard.

Hiccup and I did one victory loop and landed in front of her father.

"Hiccup, what were you thinking?" he asked his voice heavy with concern.

"I was thinking, all I needed to do was to get to Toothless and together we'd be able to make things right." She explained.

Her father looked back once more at the island and the burning ship behind us. "You were right, Thank you Toothless, you were right, both of you. I shouldn't have sent the dragons away."

"So does this mean they can come back?" Hiccup asked placing her hand on my head.

"Yes, the dragons are welcome back to Berk."

"Yes!" Hiccup cried getting back in the saddle as we took to the skies to meet up with the others and to tell them the good news.

The flight home was well celebrated by dragons and riders alike. And the welcome home was as much celebratory. Everyone was so happy to see us back, all except the old man who was the cause of it all in the first place.

"What are you cheering about? Don't you remember what these beasts have done?" he spat.

"I do, they saved our lives." Stoick said threateningly.

Then my Hiccup stood up to him. "And may not be able to prove what you've done, but I will never forget it." She warned darkly.

I sent a glare his way warning him if ever tried anything like this again, I would incinerate him without and remorse. But right then, all I could think about was that I was back with the one I love and there was nothing in this world that was going to take her from me again and I could tell she was thinking the same thing.

#### 44. Chapter 44

#### Chapter 44

(six months later)

We were in my room, I was at work coming up with new lessons for the academy when my Dad and Gobber came to me asking me for a solution to a present problem, the dragons were proving to be too heavy to land on peoples' roofs.

It took me a few minutes, but I finally had a design for a perch that should have been sturdy enough to hold a number of dragons at a time.

It took all day and all night but we finally got the perches made and were at work placing them around the village. After everything was in place, everyone was so happy. Now the dragons had places of their own they could land and rest.

That night, my Dad, Gobber, Toothless and I were at home celebrating our success. Toothless was eating his favorite fish while Dad, Gobber and I were having water from the well.

"Some of your best work yet." Dad said congratulating me. "Although we may to move the one over the well." He said under his breath.

But I was too excited to hear. "And the perches are just the beginning. We could build landing areas for them, maybe even stables in the caves underneath the village."

"Easy lass. Remember Berk is still for people." Dad said trying to slow me down.

"Vikings before dragons." Gobber commented.

Toothless suddenly cringed and ran upstairs. I knew Toothless and he never ran. I then heard thunder outside. Dad, Gobber and I ran outside. Lightening was flashing and striking all throughout the village.

"Oh, the lightening is hitting everywhere." I gasped.

"It doesn't usually strike here in the village." My Dad said quizzically.

"Thor must be angry. The only other time I can remember lightening ever striking Berk," Gobber recalled.

"Barndstat." They said together.

"Barnd-who?" I asked.

"Jorgen Barndstat, drifter sailed into town. He was stealing from widows and old men." Dad explained darkly.

"To punish him, Thor gave a lightening blot right to his helmet while he was repairing the mast on his ship to make his escape." Gobber laughed.

"By the time Thor was finished with him, our whole fleet was on fire."

"We shipped him off the island and Thor hasn't hit the village since."

"Threw him off the island, pretty harsh." I said.

The lightening got worse and several houses were set ablaze. My Dad and Gobber ran about trying to help the village. I tried to help, but Toothless got frightened by a bolt of lightening and ran off. I ran through the village looking for him. Astrid and Stormfly landed just outside the Great Hall.

"I need your, I need to find Toothless." I cried.

"I just saw him by the Great Hall." She said as she helped me on top of Stormfly.

When we got to there, everyone was gathering to get away from the storm. I saw Toothless on top of one of the perches. I was about to call out to him but a bolt of lightening chased him off again.

"Toothless!"

Unfortunately Mildew took that time to show up. "Did you all see that?" he said pointing to Toothless.

Everyone looked and saw Toothless jumping from perch to perch to avoid the lightening. I was too concerned for my love to notice. After he landed in front of the Great Hall I rushed to meet him.

"Don't you all understand, Thor is mad at all of us, and I'll tell you why. Because of him." He said pointing at Toothless. "As you all know the Night Fury is the unholy offspring of lightening and death itself. We've let him live among us and we will all pay the price and having our chief's own daughter be the beast's lover hasn't helped us at all in this circumstance."

"Well it does seem as though the lightening struck right at the dragon." Bucket, one our village's farmers said, not really helping.

"Yes right at the dragon, and a lightening storm the likes of which we've never had. There is but one thing for us to do. Banish the Night Fury! It's the only way." Mildew cried rousing the village again against the very one who sacrificed so much for our home.

He was trying to take him from me again.

"Thor is angry at us because of the Night Fury. You all saw it." Mildew said getting their attention.

"What? No this is ridiculous." I cried.

"If we don't act now, well need I remind you of Barndstat?" he said darkly.

Everyone was scared and I didn't blame them, but there was no way that this storm was Toothless' fault. Thankfully Dad stepped in to support Toothless.

"You're right all of you, Thor is angry, but I don't believe he's angry at Toothless." He said turning their attention to him.

"That's right. Have you all forgotten what Toothless has done for this village?" I cried reminding them who it was that had been protecting them since the war ended.

"Well then who do you suppose he's angry at? You perhaps for being the dragon's lover?" Mildew snarled at me.

"I don't presume to know Thor's mind Mildew, but we will find a way to soothe his anger." My Dad said before I could say anything back.

I took Toothless home and got him upstairs. After he was settled down in his bed, I changed in to my dragon form and tried to console him.

"Toothless, don't worry, I'm not going to let Mildew separate us again." I said rubbing my head against his.

"I'm sorry I ran off my love." He apologized returning the gesture. "It's just that, it was during a storm like this, that lost my first mate."

"I'm so sorry."

"We were just out for a flight just for time to be together. When a storm like this one rolled around and forced us to land on an island inhabited by humans who were even more vicious than your people were during the war. When they discovered us, we tried to run, but we were trapped.

"She forced me to fly away without her, said she would buy time to get away. I wasn't going to leave her, but buy the time I could turn back around to help her, it was too late, she was gone.

"So now every time, I hear the thunder or see a bolt of lightening, it all reminds me of how helpless I was to save the dragoness I deeply cared for. After I lost her, I thought I would never love again, until I met you. You are everything she was and more." He explained to me wrapping his wing around me.

"I'm so sorry about your first mate. I wish I could have been there to help." I said nuzzling closer to him.

"Don't be. If she hadn't done what she did, then I never would have met you and the war would still be going on." He said returning the gesture. "We should get some rest, we have a long day ahead of us tomorrow." He said settling down.

"If you want, I can sleep with you tonight." I offered. "Just like you did when you and the others were banished to Dragon Island."

"You knew huh?" he chuckled.

"I may be half dragon but I still have a dragon's nose in more human form or otherwise." I giggled giving him a playful shove.

"Good night my moon in the night." He said soothingly.



"Good night my dearest love." I replied getting comfortable next to him.

As we dozed off I vowed I would do anything to make sure that the village saw that Thor wasn't mad at Toothless. I wasn't going to let anyone separate us again.

## 45. Chapter 45

### Chapter 45

The next day, Toothless and I met the others by the forge. Dark clouds were still hanging over Berk.

"Another storm is coming." I muttered comforting Toothless, he was still frightened by the storms and I didn't blame him.

Everyone was talking about ideas to make Thor happy. Some had stories about people they knew who had to pay tribute to make the gods happy, others were offering ideas, some more ridiculous than others. Then Snotlout, indirectly, gave me a good idea.

"If I were Thor, I would want a giant statue, of myself. Snotlout as Thor." He said puffing out his pride again.

"You do know we're trying to make him happy." Astrid said irritated.

"Exactly." Snotlout replied kissing his biceps.

Astrid suppressed a gag. "I think I just threw up in my mouth."

Snotlout's moment of pride gave me an idea. "Actually, that's not a bad idea." I said brightly. "I mean the statue of Thor."

"Berk has never given Thor a statue." Fishlegs said deep in thought.

"Well then it's high time he did." I said finally seeing a chance to prove that this had nothing to do with Thor being angry with Toothless.

Everyone got to work making the pieces for the statue. While I monitored, I saw a chance to make a gift for Toothless. I took some of the metal from the scrape they didn't use and melded it to a round shape. Once it was the size and shape I wanted, I got to work engraving a design into it. While everyone was putting the finishing touches on their pieces for me evaluate, I went to the house to see Toothless.

He was up in our room on his bed looking uncomfortable to say it mildly. "Hey love, I made something for you." I said kneeling by his bed. "It's a bracelet, see it goes around your tail. I know I'm not always going to be there so I engraved it with a symbol of protection." I explained showing him the round symbol that wrapped the full of the bracelet.

I couldn't understand him, but as I placed my gift around his tail,

he had a look in his eyes that told me he more than grateful for my gift of love. I heard a knock and Astrid told me they were ready for me to check their pieces.

I liked what I saw, even if Snotlout did get Thor's knee bent in the wrong way, but other than that everything looked good and it couldn't be sooner, the storm was getting closer.

"Alright guys, we'd better start wielding these pieces together." I said looking at all they had done. "Yeah, I really think Thor's gonna like this." I said feeling confident about this plan.

It didn't take long for everyone to wield the pieces together and to help me get it into the middle of town. Or for everyone to gather to see what we had made.

"Attention, attention every one, okay so I know we're not exactly Thor's favorite people right now. But I am confident that this beautiful statue will go a long way toward getting us back in his good graces. So without further a dueâ€¦" I said as Toothless helped me pull the cover off the statue.

Everyone was in awe at the work the six of us with the help of our dragons had accomplished in one day.

"Well done. Thor will appreciate this tribute and will smile upon us once again." Dad announced his voicing beaming with confidence that my plan would work.

Everyone seemed to breathe easy believing that our gift to Thor would soothe his rage. But Mildew remained unconvinced.

"You really think this is enough to appease the mighty Thor while you allow a Night Fury and his traitorous lover in your midst?" he roared. "You're fools, all of you!"

It was irritating to see him try to turn everyone against Toothless, but I felt deep inside everything was going to be alright because I knew that this time, I wasn't going to let anyone take Toothless from me again.

As night fell, the storm arrived and I held my breath that my plan would work, but thing sonly got worse.

"Unbelievable, even more lightening than the last storm." I groaned.

"I don't understand, we gave Thor a giant statue." Gobber groaned with me.

We shut the door and went inside.

"It was a gallant effort lass, but it looks as though this is not what Thor wanted." My Dad said apologetically.

Gobber scooted away. "Gobber what are you doing?" I asked.

"I love Toothless, I'm just airing on the side of caution" he said awkwardly.

Toothless looked at me and groaned in fear. "Don't worry my love, I'm going to let anything happen to you, no matter what some people think." I said comforting him.

Toothless sat down by the fire pit and I knelt by him and stroked his head soothingly. I started getting a bad feeling in the pit of my stomach. Maybe it wasn't Toothless that Thor was mad at, maybe it really was me. Was Thor angry at me for falling in love with the unholy offspring of lightening and death itself?

As I asked myself this, Dad paced around the house trying to figure out what to do.

"You don't really think that Thor is angry because of Toothless, do you?" I asked as he passed me.

"Of course I don't." he reassured me, but as he answered, there was a knock at the door.

"Open up Stoick, we've come for the Night Fury!" Mildew voice echoed muffled from outside.

"But I'm afraid they do." He said darkly. "Bet Toothless to a safe place, I'll try to reason with them." He instructed.

I wasn't sure about leaving but Dad was insistent. "Just go." He said looking me in the as if telling that there was no other way.

I didn't argue anymore and turned back to Toothless. I pointed upstairs and we jumped out the window above my bed. We looked around the corner and saw all the people that had gathered outside. I felt my heart drop but I had other things to worry about like hiding the one I cared about most away from all the ones who wanted to hurt him for something that he had nothing to do with.

"Don't worry love, it's you and me." I said assuring him that everything was going to be alright.

We turned and ran into the forest. We found a good place to look out and made our way to Astrid's to say our goodbye and what we planned to do.

"We can Toothless in the cove for now." She thought.

"They'll just find him, no we have to leave." I said seeing no other option.

"We?" she asked.

"He won't leave the island unless I'm with him, and I wouldn't want him to. I'm going with him Astrid." I explained.

"But you'll come back right?" she asked.

"Yeah, eventually, when they all realize this didn't happen because of Toothless." I answered.

We heard the mob getting closer. "You'd better go." Astrid said concern in her voice.

Finding no other ways to say good bye, I just got onto Toothless' back and we flew away from the village.

We flew a ways into the forest and saw that the villagers were already at the cove looking for him. We shared a look and took to the sky again. We thought we were in the clear until lightening started flashing around us. We maneuvered as best we could but a bolt of lightening struck Toothless in the tail and stunned him causing us to fall from the sky.

"Toothless!" I cried out to him.

We crashed into a tree and several of its branches on the way down. When we were finally on the ground I asked Toothless if he was okay. He showed his tail and I saw the bracelet I had made him earlier that same day was destroyed. But something occurred to me as I touched, not the best idea on my part. As I pulled my hand away from the scorched metal, I was thinking about the place it had struck us. Then I looked back at the village and observed where the lightening was striking. The perches, the statue.

"The metal. I wonderâ€¦" I thought aloud, but I never finished, because out of nowhere, we were ambushed by the villagers.

They surrounded Toothless and tried to tie him down. Others dragged me away and held me back. "Don't try and stop us, you'll only make it worse for your precious dragon." Mildew snarled at me.

That didn't stop me, I kept fighting. But I could get away, Toothless was placed on a cart and being dragged away from me.

"Toothless!" I cried trying to stop them.

The villagers pulled me away again and threw me back as they headed back to the village. No, I wasn't going to let them take him. I changed into my dragon form and flew back to the village not caring if Mildew saw me change or not. All that mattered was that I save the one I cared about most and nothing else.

I landed in front of the forge and changed back to my human form and went inside. I found a metal spear and was about to leave when I saw Astrid and the others come in.

"Hiccup, they got Toothless." She said out of breathe. "They're about to float him out to sea."

"I know, why do you think I have this?" I replied.

"Oh, tough one, how many guesses do we get, five?" Tuffnut asked.

"Okay," I said under my breathe feeling very annoyed but there would be time for that later, "Astrid, fly me to the docks." I asked as we mounted Stormfly.

The trip only took thirty seconds, but to me it felt like we couldn't get there fast enough. When we got there, we my Dad, Gobber, Bucket and Mulch standing their ground to defend Toothless against the mob. I had to stop it before things got even more out of control.

"Stop! Stop!" I cried stepping in their path. "You could get rid of Toothless, you could throw him off the edge of the world but it's not going to stop this lightening from destroying Berk." The villagers all questioned me saying they didn't believe it. "It's the metal, the lightening is hitting the metal. Just think about it, we've never had a lightening storm like this until we put up those perches, that statue right? And they're all made of metal." I explained hoping to drive some logic back into their minds.

"Have you ever heard of anything so insane?" Mildew sneered demeaning my argument.

"You see this is where the lightening struck Toothless," I said holding up his tail. "On this bracelet that I made for him, this metal bracelet." No seemed to buy it. "But if you don't believe me I can prove it." I cried realizing I would have to do what I hoped I wouldn't have to. I race back to Astrid and Stormfly and asked them to fly me up.

"Are you sure you know what you're doing?" Astrid asked her voice full of worry."

"Sure that's a strong word, it's really more of a hunch." I said realizing that what I was telling her didn't exactly make her feel better. "Look I'll be fine, go." I said gesturing for her to get away.

I heard my Dad call out to me, but all I could think about was that it was all or nothing. "You'll all see for your selves." The lightening was getting closer. "When I attach this metal rod to the top of this mast," closer, "the lightening will be drawn toâ€¦" the last thing I remember was being hit with a strange surge through my body and then darkness.

## 46. Chapter 46

### Chapter 46

I watched as Hiccup tried to play her final triumph to prove the storm wasn't my fault. As the bolt hit her, I felt my heart stop. As she fell to the water, I pushed harder against my bounds.

"I will never lose my love again!" I cried breaking free.

I jumped into the water and saw her sinking. As I swam down after her, I could feel her heart slowing.

'Hiccup please, hold on I'm coming.' I thought desperately as I swam harder and harder to reach her.

When I was within reach, I grabbed the collar of her tunic and swam for the surface. I leaped onto the dock and dragged her up. I nudged her pleading that she was okay. Everyone around us was in shock. But at the moment all my thoughts were the unmoving form of my love.

"Don't you see, Thor was angry, but not at the Night Fury, but at his traitorous lover. If we are to survive we must banish her as well as her demon lover." The old man cried.

I felt my fire rising in my chest. 'Over my dead body.' I thought angrily.

How I wanted so badly to incinerate him for this. He almost got my Hiccup killed and still he wanted to turn the village against me and her. Fortunately for him Astrid beat me to it.

"Shut up Mildew!" she shouted at him. "You it just like we did, the lightening was attracted to the metal rod and you know it."

"Astrid, you, Gobber and Toothless take Hiccup to the house. I'll take care of the village." Stoick said lifting Hiccup up and putting her in her mentor's arms.

"We'll take care of her Stoick." Her mentor assured her father.

I never took my eyes off her. When we got to the house, Gobber placed her on the bed and Astrid pulled the blanket over her unmoving form. I stood beside her bed watching her, check her for any signs that she was going to be alright. I couldn't 'lose her like I lost my first mate, I didn't care what happened ot me as long as the one I loved most was safe.

"I don't get it, why didn't she just change into her dragon form, she could've stopped everything before it got so out of hand." Astrid asked confused.

"Because she was hiding her ability to change from Mildew. If he knew that she could change into a dragon who knows what he would to turn the village against her." Gobber explained to her.

"But the village already knows that she can change into a dragon, why hide it from them?"

"The village may know, but who knows what they would do if Mildew knew and managed to turn the village against her as well as Toothless. That's why, no matter what, Hiccup doesn't change whenever Mildew has the village rallied against them."

"I see, I guess I never thought of it that way."

"We should go, there's not much we can do for her now except hope that she wakes up." Gobber said as he escorted Astrid out of Hiccup's room.

I remained unmoved. I wasn't going to leave my mate's side until I knew she was okay. It was dawn before she finally opened her eyes. I was right there for her.

"Toothless, what happened love?" she asked rubbing my face.

Presently, her father came up stairs. "My girl, you're alright." He said lifting her off the bed and tossing her like she was still a child. "You took a lightening bolt to the head." He said with a sigh of relief.

"Just like Barndstat, except we won't be throwing you off the island." Gobber joked.

"So everyone knows Thor wasn't mad at Toothless?" she asked feeling anxious.

"They do now." Her father answered.

"Until we figure why Thor was angry at the metal, we're all walking on egg shells." Gobber said cheerfully.

Later that day, while Hiccup and I were settling down after a long night, everyone started coming by with pies and fish. This one child reached up to feed me a cod and I happily accepted it. She touched her hand to my snout and Hiccup put her arm around me.

The little girl asked if we could take her flying, Hiccup was okay with it, but she needed the parents' consent. They agreed and we allowed her to climb on my back. We flew around the island for a few minutes and brought her back to the house. Her parents apologized for their parent in the mob and went home.

Hiccup and I accepted all apologies, but in all honesty, we were just happy to know that we were safe together again.

## 47. Chapter 47

### Chapter 47

(a week later)

I was sound asleep when I caught a familiar scent. I knew that scent and I knew who it belonged to, he was back and I wasn't ready to turn down our fight this time. He was the reason I lost my first love and this time I was going to make him pay. I wasn't going to let him take my love again, there was no way I letting him anywhere near Hiccup.

He burrowing under the house, but there wasn't anything I could do without destroying the place. All I could do was growl.

"Toothless, go back to sleep." Hiccup groaned.

I was rather on edge about it, but I settled down and waited for dawn. When we went outside the next day, everyone was gathered in the plaza, and I soon saw why. There was a hole in the middle of the plaza and I knew who had made it. He was here and I knew why and I wasn't going to let hurt Hiccup without a fight. I cried out for him to face me.

"Whoa, hey it's just a hole love." Hiccup said trying to calm me down.

I soon jumped in and searched the tunnels for him. After a minute, which felt like eternity, I heard the commotion up top and raced back the surface. The other dragons and their riders were challenging my rival, a Spined Burrowing One whom I had known since I was a hatchling.

"No this is my fight." I shouted trying to get the other dragons to back off.

The Spined Burrowing One and I locked a fight in the middle of the plaza. Hiccup tried to change into her dragon form to help me, but I managed to cancel her change with a simple reversal spell. As shocked as she was, she was more shocked at the fact that I didn't want her helping me. If he saw her in her dragon form, he would know who she was and he would know that Hiccup was my lover. There was no way I was going to let him hurt her. I would do anything to keep her safe.

The fight went on for only a minute but in that time, he had managed to lodge a spine into my leg. While he would've used the distraction to kill me, the sun came out and chased back to his hole. He burrowed away from the village.

Hiccup raced by my side. "Oh no, you're hurt." She said with her voice full of worry.

She pulled the spine out of my leg and I flew up and perched on a ledge overlooking the direction the Whispering Death fled. This wasn't over, he would be back and I would be ready.

## 48. Chapter 48

### Chapter 48

Toothless was acting very strange today. Not only had he freaked out when he saw the hole in the middle of town, but when a Whispering Death appeared and I tried to help him, he canceled my transformation and refused to let anyone help him.

When I pulled the spine out of his leg, he ran off to a ledge overlooking the direction where the Whispering Death fled.

"Where's he going?" Astrid asked.

"Probably running away to lick his wounds." Snotlout laughed.

"It's not funny, Toothless could have been killed." I ranted at him for what he had just said about my love.

"Does anyone want to talk about what in the name of Thor just happened?" Fishlegs spoke up.

"Uh, dragon fight, just another day on Berk." Tuffnut commented.

"Uh not really. It seemed like there was way more to it than that." Fishlegs said with doubt in his voice.

"He's right, the Whispering Death singled Toothless out." I spoke up remembering the Whispering Death's behavior when it saw Toothless.

"And Toothless wanted that dragon all to himself." Astrid finished.

"Yeah he certainly did, but why?" I asked.

"Uh, are we going to be tested on this because I am completely



confused." Tuffnut spoke up.

"Well don't look at me." Ruffnut replied.

I kept thinking about what had happened that day. I tried to change to help Toothless but he prevented me from changing and then when I tried to talk to him about it he kept changing the subject. That night I was rubbing medicine into his wound and pleading with him to talk to me about what happened out there. When my Dad came up to check on us, Toothless got defensive like he was expecting someone else.

"Easy love, it's just my Dad." I said calming him down.

"How's our wounded warrior?" he asked.

"He's still a little on edge." I replied.

"Don't worry Toothless." Dad said patting his snout. "I think we showed that dragon a thing or two about uninvited guest on Berk. I don't think he'll be coming back anytime soon. At least I hope not." He said heading back down stairs.

"Yeah me too." I muttered. "Okay that should do it love. You just need to take it easy." I said softly rubbing in the last of the medicine.

He settled into his bed and closed his eyes to go to sleep. I watched him for a minute then settled into my own bed and went to sleep.

A few minutes after I fell asleep, I thought I heard Toothless talking to me through our mental link.

"\_I'm sorry Hiccup, but this is something that you just can't help me with. There is just too much in this that you don't understand. If anything happened to you, I could never live with myself. Please just stay out of this."\_ He said as if pleading me to.

At first I thought it was just a dream so I didn't think much of it. But when I opened my eyes the next morning and saw Toothless wasn't in his bed, I began to think otherwise.

I ran outside calling his name, and when I didn't see him, that's when I knew what had happened.

"He went after him, alone." I said to myself feeling my heart begin to race and mind start to panic.

Toothless was still hurt from yesterday and if he tried to fight that thing now, I didn't even want to think about what would happen to him. But I had to find him, because whether he wanted my help or not, I was going to help get through this.

## 49. Chapter 49

### Chapter 49

I kept searching through the forest all night and into the early morning. The whole time I kept thinking about how worried Hiccup

might be and if I did the right thing leaving like I did. I kept thinking that it was just to keep her safe and that as long as she stayed out of it, she would be safe. But then I remembered what she was like when it came to this kind of things and knew she was going to try and help me no matter what.

That's when I knew that I had to find the Spined Burrowing One and finish him before Hiccup found him or before he found her and she was forced to defend herself.

I was half way across the island when I heard Hiccup scream not far away from where I was. I raced in the direction of the scream. When I got there I saw Hiccup and the other riders running from him. I pounced him and threw in the other direction.

"If you want to kill me it's one thing, but I will never let you hurt the one I care about most." I said standing my ground.

"Your mate has been dead for centuries. What do you care what happens to these humans?"

"Get off this island!" I cried as he drove underground and fled again.

I felt Hiccup try to touch me and I shook her off. "Love it's me." She said her voice full of worry and concern. "I know what's going on between you and that other dragon." I felt my heart leap in my throat. Had he seen her change and told her what had happened? "Just let me help you." I ran off and she ran after me. I couldn't let her follow me. I blew a small blast at her feet.

"I'm sorry Hiccup, but I can't risk your life in our conflict just stay out of this." I cooed pleadingly.

I looked back and saw the fear in her eyes. I felt a pang in my chest, guilt, hurt and desperation to protect the one I love most. It all hurt so much, but I knew I was doing what had to be done, I wouldn't go through the pain of losing my mate again, I swore I would do whatever it took to protect Hiccup. Even if it meant taking her dragon form away or sacrificing my life.

I ran in the direction he fled and called for him to come out and face him. I stood watch for any sign he was coming when I heard someone coming. I turned and saw it was Hiccup, I looked into her eyes and saw she was scared, scared for me and that she was going to lose me. She was approaching me with her dragon form she was approaching me as herself and nothing more.

She held out her hand for me and I brought my head up to meet it. I felt the warmth of pulse she always carried when we touched. She embraced me.

"Hey love, you had me so worried there for a while. You haven't been yourself lately, good to see you're still you." She said holding me tight.

Our embrace was short lived when I heard him coming. "You can just walk away from this love." Hiccup tried to call to me. "Let's just go home."

I nudged her off and engaged the Spined Burrowing One in a fight to the death. I heard the other dragons trying to step in.

"Stay out of this!" I cried to them. "He's mine!"

Things got longer and harder. Hiccup followed us to the canyon overlooking Long Beach. I heard her crying out my name but I kept fighting, I wasn't going to let this monster near her.

At least he pinned me to side of the cliff. I couldn't move. I heard Hiccup cry out for me and saw her jump from the cliff and change into her dragon form. I watched in horror as the Spined Burrowing One watched her change into a Dark One. I saw the dark look in his eyes, the same look he had in his eyes the day he lured us the island that got my mate killed.

I fought to get free and he pushed against me harder, the harder he pushed the more my chest felt like was going to give. I was on the verge of blacking out when I heard Hiccup cry out for me and a fire blast hit him. He released me and went after Hiccup.

I shook off the dizzying spell and flew after them. I aimed a shot at the back of his head and Hiccup knocked him to the ground.

"I thought I told you to stay out of this." I called to her.

"And I thought I told you I wasn't going to leave you." She called back. "Together, you and I can face anything."

I thought about it and knew she was right. We were about to fly back when a spine shot from below got Hiccup in the leg. She cried out in pain and found it difficult to stay airborne. She maintained a steady hover and dodged another shot. I deflected it with a plasma blast and flew down to face him again. Hiccup joined and we fought to get the beast off our land.

The sun peaked out and drove it back underground.

"The sunlight Hiccup, that's its weakness." Fishlegs called to her.

"Alright, Love, let's keep him above ground." Hiccup called to me.

We dove down and flew over the hole and we each fire a blast into the hole around us. The holes lite up with fire like geysers. It was truly amazing to see, but we had other things to worry about. Once he was driven out, we pinned him to the ground. I wanted to finish it, but Hiccup's voiced called me back.

"Why do you listen to that weak dragoness?" he shrieked.

"Because I love her!" I cried. "I almost lost the one I care about most today because our grudge. I'm done." I said calming down.

"This isn't over." He grumbled as he flew off the island.

I saw Hiccup slump to the ground and I pulled the spine out of her leg. I healed her leg and she rubbed her head against mine. I embraced her back. She changed back as the others landed close

by.

"Oh man, Toothless could've finished him off." Snotlout said as if disappointed.

"I guess all dragon grudges aren't to the death." Hiccup said as she rubbed my head.

"I guess I'll have to change that in the book." Fishlegs said as he flew off.

Hiccup and I shared a look and flew home. Once we were in our room, Hiccup changed back and let me look at her leg. It was healing good, but she was still in a lot of pain.

"I'm sorry you had to face my demons today Hiccup. I shouldn't have tried to keep you of it." I said settling down on my bed.

"No I'm sorry. I should have listened to you and not gotten involved." She said settling next to me.

"Yes, but if you hadn't I would be dead. I am glad you fought beside me." I said nuzzling her face.

"Thank you. I promise that as long as we are together, there is nothing we can't face together." She said nuzzling back.

I placed my wing over my mate and we settled down after a long day. I listened to her heart and it still beat as strong as it did the day we met.

## 50. Chapter 50

### Chapter 50

(a month later)

Toothless and I raced through the clouds in the early morning. It was so beautiful to race through the pink and orange clouds as the sun rose. When we reached the cliff overlooking Thor's Beach, I hovered for a minute to admire the sun rise.

"Hey slowpoke, what's taking so long?" Toothless called.

"I was just admiring the sun as it rose." I called back as I caught up to him.

"It really is a beautiful isn't it?" he said as I flew close by.

"Yes, and I can see why no dragon ever gets tired of it. Cause I never do." I breathed as we flew back to the village.

We were about to land in the house when we saw my Dad leaving in a hurry. I changed into my human form and caught him before he got too far ahead of me.

"Dad, what's going on?" I asked hoping I can slow him down.

"Trader Johann's here Hiccup." He said excitedly.

"Really! Well we better hurry!" I said as he and I took off for the docks with Toothless close behind.

When I we got to the docks, I set looking for what it was that I had been needing for days. Ink, I ran out coming up with lesson plans for the academy, drawing new saddle designs for the riders, writing in my journals, and drawing Toothless.

I picked up a small pot full of ink. "Oh, that's pure squid ink Hiccup, wrestled from the colossal squid of the northern waters." Johann explained rubbing his shoulder.

I reached into my satchel for something to trade. "How about this spy glass? You know I made it myself." I said handing him my spy glass.

"I know, you've given me five just like it, unfortunately I've only got the two eyes." He said handing it back. "What else have you got?"

"What do you think of this wench?" I said handing him a pulley out of my satchel. "Hey it'll help you pull up your gangplank."

"A welcome tool for a man's ailing shoulder. Consider it done." He said accepting the trade.

I saw my Dad testing another sword. "Wow another sword, just what we need." I said teasingly.

"If you must know it's not for me." He said as he continued to swing it. "I'm heading off to my yearly meeting with the chief of the Shivering Shores. The last man who showed up without a gift, left without a head."

I heard Mildew come on board but didn't pay much mind to him. Trader Johann was here for a short time and I looked around for a gift for Toothless. I heard Toothless start to growl, and turned to see Toothless ready to pounce. I didn't have time to move, when he pounced, I was pushed to the left, but righted myself and stepped between Toothless and Johann.

"Sorry Johann, he's just being protective." I said hoping to calm Johann and Toothless.

Once things mellowed down, I turned back and saw I had dropped my ink pot. It was broken and the ink splattered all over the deck.

"Oh it's gone." I groaned.

"Oh, sorry lass, that was my last one." Johann said sympathetically. "But rest assured I'll find that colossal squid and wrestle you another bottle." He promised.

"Oh Toothless." I sighed turning to him.

I saw he had apology in his eyes and was very sorry. I couldn't be angry with him, it was an accident but I still felt a little hurt to know it was going to be who knows how long before I could get more

ink. At least I knew I could never run out of charcoal.

Toothless and I went back to the academy were later met up by the others. Ruff and Tuff had a gift with them. It was a statue like one of the ones we had surrounding the island.

"How does that look?" Tuff said pushing it into place.

"Beautiful." Ruff answered.

"You got them just for the academy?" I asked surprised.

"Yeah we got them from Trader Johann, we had to give him our great grandfather's skull, we got to keep his clavicle." Tuff explained.

"Wow, you now, it's about time you guys started taking some pride in this place." I said feeling like they cared, big mistake, because the next thing I knew Tuff pulled me to the ground.

I heard a small explosion and I knew what it was. The dragons saw the statue as a toy they could fire at. I didn't say anything because the dragons deserved to have a little fun. But as Toothless was about to take his shot, he began to sneeze.

I was unnerved because it had never happened before but when I asked him if he was okay he just shook me off saying it was nothing, that he just a little snuffle and that he was fine. I was still worried but if Toothless said he was okay then he must have been, right?

## 51. Chapter 51

### Chapter 51

Astrid and I were flying around the village but Toothless's flying was starting to feel off. He sneezed and just lost control of his flight. After a rough landing, Toothless collapsed on the ground and could barely even lift his head to look at me.

"Maybe he's got a cold or something." I said feeling the uneasiness getting more intense. "Do dragons get colds?"

"Whoa, look at that." Astrid said pointing out a Terror flopping to the ground in the same condition as Toothless. "Well whatever it is looks like he's got it too." She said cradling him in her arms.

Astrid and I helped Toothless to the house and by the fire pit. Astrid went to find Gobber and I stayed to comfort Toothless. When Gobber came by he had a pot with a weird concoction in it and heated over the fire. While he was doing that, I started to feel a little under the weather too. But all my thoughts were on Toothless.

"This will fix him right up." Gobber chimed.

"What is that?" I asked feeling a hot flash shot through my body.

"It's best not to ask." Gobber said warningly. "Whatever you do, don't touch it." He warned.

Presently Toothless sneezed and splattered it all over Gobber. "Well that's ruined. I'll never get that yak to vomit again." He grumbled.

As if on cue, Astrid came and told me I might want to see what was going on outside. When I stepped out, I saw that the other dragons were all acting like Toothless before he collapsed. They were flying lopsidedly, some struggling to stay airborne.

"It's spreading to all the dragons." I said feeling more worried than before. "How do we stop this?" I asked turning to Gobber.

"Gothi, she'll know what to do." Gobber chimed.

While he and Astrid went to find her, I helped the other riders get their dragons back to their homes. Then I went home and sat by Toothless and waited for Gothi to come and look at him. While they were gone, I started to feel lightheaded.

Toothless looked at me with heavy concern in his eyes. "It's alright love, I'm okay." I reassured him wiping a bead of sweat from my head.

He didn't seem to buy it, but he was too weak to argue with me. When Gothi arrived, she got right work looking over Toothless. I stood back and let her work. When Gothi stepped away to think it over, I sat right back next to Toothless and began to stroke his head.

"She says they're reacting to something like they're allergic." Gobber said translating Gothi's writing.

"Allergic, to what?" I asked feeling very worried.

"To a moose wearing boots." Gobber translated causing me to raise a brow in question. "Shouldn't be hard to find." Thawck! Went Gothi's staff against his head. "I didn't think that was right." He corrected himself. "Oh, they're allergic to something new that's just come to the island." He translated again. "But that still looks like a moose."

"But, there are a lot of new things on the island, Trader Johann was just here." Astrid put in.

"She says to get rid of everything, immediately." Gobber translated again. "Otherwise it's just going to get worse, the dragons are going to get sicker." He said gravely.

I hugged Toothless close feeling very scared. Whatever it was that was making the dragons sick, we had to find it and get rid of it. I was too scared of losing Toothless to notice at the time that I was feeling very hot.

As Gobber, Astrid, and I rallied up the villagers to get rid of all the things they had bought from Trader Johann. Needless to say no one was very happy about it, but after some 'tact and sensitivity' on Gobber's part, we convinced everyone to throw everything into a pit we had dug on Long Beach.

"I know this is hard guys, but I promise you you're doing a good thing. You're helping the dragons." I reassured everyone.

"It's the least we can do for them." Astrid supported.

Everyone groaned and sighed with disappointed but they didn't argue. One by one everyone threw in everything they had bought from Trader Johann. It then I noticed Gobber had thrown anything in.

I turned to him expecting him to listen to me. "I don't see you throwing anything into the pile and I thought I saw you buy something form Trader Johann." I said suspiciously.

"He did, he bought silk." Astrid stepped in.

"Hand it over Gobber."

"Can't do that Hiccup, it's uh, currently in use." He said awkwardly. "It's my skivvies, they're glorious." He whispered.

I wasn't giving in. I glared at him like I would have if I was his mother. "Fine." He sighed defeated.

He stepped behind a rock and removed his underpants and threw them into the pit. While I was happy he did as he was told, I was still feeling sick.

"I could've gone my whole life without seeing that." I groaned.

Astrid and I hung around a little longer until we were sure that everyone had thrown everything into the pit. It almost sundown by the time everyone had come by and thrown their purchases into the pit. Astrid and I went by my place I checked on Toothless and he didn't seem any better. But it had been only a few hours so we couldn't expect immediate results.

"I'm gonna go check on Stormfly." Astrid said as she turned to leave. "Are going to be alright?" she asked before she opened the door.

"I'll be okay." I said stroking Toothless' head.

After Astrid left, I made some fish stew for dinner. After I finished and sat back down next to Toothless, Gobber came and checked on me. While he was there, I started to feel very hot, light headed, and violently ill. My stomach was in knots and my head was spinning.

"Are you alright lass?" he asked noticing me holding my head.

"I don't know. I've been feeling a little sick since this morning." I answered feeling a little woozy.

"Maybe you should get to bed." He suggested helping me to my feet.

"Why I should." I said getting up to my feet. "Can you help me get Toothless up to bed?" I asked turning back.



"Sure thing lass." He said as he helped me support Toothless as he wobbly took each step up the stairs to his bed.

After Toothless was laid down, I started to feel really light headed. I almost lost my footing and Gobber caught me and helped me into bed.

"Just get some rest lass, I'm sure you'll feel better in the morning. Probably." He said as he turned to leave.

"I hope so." I said weakly.

I looked at Toothless one more time and laid down and closed my eyes. It wasn't easy falling asleep but I managed to fall into a light sleep. I got a really sinking feeling about what was happening with the dragons and that it was no coincidence that I was getting sick too. I just hoped that whatever it was we had gotten rid of it when we threw everything into the pit.

## 52. Chapter 52

### Chapter 52

I woke up with my head feeling very heavy and my chest feeling like someone had punched me. I tried to sit up but when I sat up I started to feel very dizzy. I felt legs get wobbly and almost lost my footing. I laid back down and let the dizziness pass.

Once it was gone, I sat up and asked Toothless if he was okay. In answer to my question, Toothless sneezed and almost blew a hole in the wall with a blast while doing so. I wanted to go over and comfort him but every time I tried to get up I was hit with a wave of dizziness.

I tried to go downstairs to see if everyone's dragons had gotten better, but once I reached the stairs, I lost all feeling in my legs and fell down the stairs. I could hear Toothless weakly growling from upstairs in concern.

"I'm alright Toothless. Just a little fumble." I called back weakly.

Presently, the door opened and Astrid came in. "Are you alright Hiccup?" she asked helping me to my feet.

"I don't know. I've been feeling sick since yesterday." I said rubbing my head. I felt sore all over from falling down the stairs.

"Maybe whatever is making the dragons sick is effecting you because you're part dragon." She said sitting me down by the table.

"What do you mean?" I asked accepting a cup of water she handed me.

As if on cue the other riders came in. "She means that even though we got rid of everything from Trader Johann our aren't getting any better, they're getting worse." Fishlegs said worriedly.

"And from the looks of it you've had better days." Snotlout remarked.

"Not helping." Astrid sneered.

"Let's make a list." I spoke up. "Maybe there's somebody who bought something from Trader Johann but hasn't thrown it into the pit."

"There must have been someone who didn't want to give up what they bought." Astrid said suspiciously.

"If I found out who was holding back, I am going to be so mad, Hookfang was sick I was up all night scraping barf off our walls." Snotlout growled.

"Oh yeah, well ours is dead." Tuffnut said darkly. We all gasped in shock. "Just kidding but he's really not that fun anymore."

"He just sits in front of our house. He won't blow anything up." Ruffnut finished.

While we were figuring something out, my Dad arrived on Thornado. "Hiccup, put this in the Book of Dragons, never fly on a stomach full of undercooked mutton." He said coming into the house. "The Shivering Shores will never be the same."

When he saw me he sudden got a look of worry on his face. "Hiccup are you alright, what happened?" he asked putting his hand on my forehead.

"It's not just me, it's the all the dragons. They're uh—" I couldn't finish, my stomach lurched and felt like I was about to barf.

"They're sick and getting worse." Astrid finished for me. "And whatever's effecting them is effecting Hiccup too."

"Astrid you and the others go take of your dragons." My Dad said as he handed me another cup of water.

"Yes sir."

When they left, Toothless weakly hobbled down the steps and laid down by the fire pit. I got out of the chair and sat next to him.

"What do you think happened?" he asked as I stroked his head.

"I don't know." I said feeling like I was about to throw up.

My stomach lurched again, more violently and I ran to the window and barfed out the window. To make matters worse, Mildew was right outside. I hobbled down stairs and tried to tell my Dad, but the door knocked before I could get a word out. My Dad answered it and saw Mildew standing outside.

"What is it Mildew?" he asked harshly.

"Oh, I just saw your girl vomit and I was wondering if she was

alright?" he asked feigning concern.

"She's fine, just got a little stomach bug is all." My Dad answered quickly.

"Oh, that's too bad. I hope she feels better." He sneered at me.

I glared at him while also trying to hold my stomach. He left after sneering at me with a look that said he hoped it got worse. I would have said some smart remark, but I was too dizzy, my head was pounding and my stomach kept lurching.

After he was gone, Dad knelt by me. "What were you saying lass?"

"I was trying to say that Gothi says they're allergic to something new to the island, but we think we got rid of everything." I groaned holding my head.

"But if the dragons aren't getting betterâ€¦" my Dad began.

"Then something must still be here that's making them sick, and whatever it is it's effecting me too because I'm half dragon so whatever it is, we have to find it and soon." I finished.

We heard Thornado outside. "Thornado?" my Dad said running for the door.

He ran outside and I got up on my shaky legs to follow him. Thornado was sneezing and sending out sonic blasts while doing so. Dad pushed me out of the way.

"Sneezing, that's the first symptom." I said supporting myself against the wall.

"But he was fine until we got back." Dad answered confused.

"We should retrace your steps." I said feeling my stomach lurch again, I ran to the back of the house and emptied my stomach again.

"I think you should stay in the house, you're too sick to be out here." My Dad said guiding me back to inside.

"Dad, I want to help." I said weakly arguing.

"I know, but if whatever is effecting the dragons is effecting you too, then the best thing you can do for yourself is to stay here until we can figure out what it is and get rid of it. Until then, you need to stay inside." He said helping me and Toothless upstairs.

I laid down my bed and watched as Toothless weakly collapsed on his. "Don't worry love, Dad and the others are going to fix everything." I said weakly hoping to make him feel a little more hopeful about what was going on. But I knew how scared he was, because I felt the same way.

If things didn't get better soon, then us and the other dragons wouldn't have much longer.

## 53. Chapter 53

### Chapter 53

Stoick had us all looking around the plaza where he had landed earlier that day. While we were looking I noticed a bush near Hiccup's house, one neither of us had seen before.

I walked over and called the others to come take a look. "Does anybody remember seeing these flowers before?" I asked suspiciously

"They were here when I got back." Said Stoick.

Fishlegs took a closer look at the one I was holding. "It looks an awful lot like the Blue Oleander, I recognize from my botany book, chapter eight."

"Is there anything specific you can remember?" Stoick asked with a lot of worry in his voice and I could understand why.

Now it wasn't just the dragons but Hiccup was getting sick too and we didn't get rid of what was causing it soon, none of them was going to have much longer.

"They're very beautiful, very soft, perianalâ€" he then paused and got a look of fear and realization on his face. "â€"and poisonous to reptiles."

"Which means poisonous to dragons and Hiccup!" I cried realizing what was going to happen if we did do something now.

"This is serious, did your book say anything about a cure?" Stoick asked with panic in his voice.

"I don't know, because someone had me throw it in a pit." Fishlegs answered sarcastically.

"Well then go back and dig it up!" Stoick shouted.

Now we were all very scared, if we couldn't find a cure we would lose not only the dragons, but we would lose Hiccup and I can't imagine the impact it would have on Stoick. I don't know how it would affect the others but I would certainly be hurt, Hiccup and I had grown really close in the past year or so and if I lost her, I don't know what I would do. She was like a sister to me and I didn't want to lose her or Stormfly. I can safely say I don't think the others wanted to lose their dragons either. But first things first, we had to figure out where the flowers came from and what we are dealing with.

"I don't understand where did these flowers come from?" I asked curiously.

"Mildew." We heard Tuffnut answer from behind. "I saw him plant them the other night."

"And you didn't think that was strange?" I asked feeling irritated.

"No, well, maybe. I don't know quit pressuring me." He answered.

"Let's go pay the old man a visit." Stoick said venomously.

The others stayed behind with their dragons while Stoick and I made our way up to Mildew's place. The whole way I was hoping Hiccup would hold on, she was a strong girl in her own right, she could get through this right?

When we got to Mildew's door, he reluctant to talk, but Stoick can be very persuasive. "What do you want?" he barked when he let us in.

"We came to ask you a few questions." I said cracking my knuckles.

"What Astrid means is," he said holding me back. "Did you plant the flowers in the middle of town?"

"Why do you ask?"

"Because your stupid flowers are making the dragons sick!" I said harshly.

"So what if I planted some flowers, the town square has never looked better. I was merely trying to spread some beauty and happiness." He said innocently.

"Since have you cared about beauty or happiness." I barked not buying it. "You did this."

"Well I had no inclining Stoick that these flowers had special properties." He said innocently. "Which true I'm no friend of the dragon but, in this case, on my life I was not trying to harm them." He said like he was making a weak attempt at a promise. "By the way Stoick, how's your daughter, is she feeling any better this evening?"

"Let's go." Stoick sighed.

As we walked back to the village, I could see the look of fear in Stoick's eyes. I opened my mouth to talk but I couldn't find the right words to say.

"What do we do now sir?" I asked flatly then mentally slapped myself for realizing how stupid I must have sounded.

"I don't know." He answered emotionless.

We didn't say anything else on the way back. When we got back to the village, we went into Hiccup's room to check on her and it didn't look good. Toothless looked bad enough, but Hiccup looked like she was barely hanging on.

Her face was pale as the snow on the mountain top and her eyes had dark rings under them making her look like she was a living corpse, her brown eyes were now gray and misty. And for the first time when I touched her hand, it wasn't warm, it was cold, like she had been out in the snow for too long.

"How're you feeling lass?" Stoick asked.

"Not feeling any better to say the least." Hiccup said weakly.

She gagged and threw up into a bucket by her bed.

"Don't worry Hiccup, we found what was making the dragons and you sick and we are trying to find a way to save you and the dragons." I said holding her hand in mine.

"What was it?" she asked her voice hoarse and scratchy.

"It was the flowers in the middle of town," Stoick answered. "The Blue Oleander, it is very poisonous to reptiles, to you." Stoick said putting his hand on her head and rubbing her hair out of her face. "Just hang in there lass, we'll find a cure. I promise."

For a moment Stoick sounded just like Hiccup, and I knew for sure that Hiccup was definitely his daughter.

Fishlegs chose that moment to come running in to the house and up the stairs. He looked like he was upset and out of breathe but the good news was he had his botany book with him and another one tucked under his arm.

"Fishlegs you found your botany book. What does it say?" I asked.

He stilled out of breathe. "Calm down, son talk to me." Stoick said approaching him.

"My botany book says that Blue Oleander's poisonous to reptiles and dragons are reptiles." He said when he found his breathe.

"We know that, was there anything else?" I pushed.

"Not in here," he said putting the book in his pocket. "But I remembered the Book of Dragons talked about a dragon that feeds on the Blue Oleander, it's called a Scauldron. In a perfect world if it eats the flowers, maybe its venom can be used as an antidote like with snakes and spiders. But alas we do not live in perfect world," he said turning the page. "Look the Scauldron has no venom."

"The book is wrong." We heard Gobber say as he came into the house and up to Hiccup's room. "I've dealt with a Scauldron before. They're sixty feet long with razor sharp teeth. It'll shoot boiling water that melts the flesh from your bones. The Scauldron has no fear, no conscious, but what a Scauldron does have is venom and lots of it."

"What do we do now?" I asked turning to Stoick.

"Dad, we need to find a Scauldron." Hiccup said trying to get out of bed.

"No lass, you too sick to go anywhere, you stay here, we'll find the Scauldron." He said laying her back down. He then turned to Fishlegs. "Fishlegs, you and the other riders stay here and take care of your dragons and my daughter."

"Yes sir." Fishlegs said turning to leave.

"Gobber, I need you to go get Mildew and have him dig up all the flowers he planted on Berk. Astrid and I will get everything ready. Now let's go find ourselves a Scauldron."

"I thought you'd never ask." Gobber said leaving the house.

While everyone was getting ready, I stayed with Hiccup and Toothless. I took another look at the Scauldron in the book before putting the book down.

"Astrid, you can't go, what if you get hurt or killed orâ€¦!" Hiccup weakly argued but her stomach lurched again and she threw up into the bucket again.

"Just hang in there Hiccup, I'll be okay and I'll be back before you know it." I said taking her hand in mine.

"Promise me you'll come back."

"I promise." I said going down the stairs and out the door to meet Stoick.

I saw talking to his Thunderdrum. When he finally looked back, I said what I had come to say with losing a word.

"Sir, it time, the boats ready." I said flatly, not sure if I should be scared, worried or angry.

From the look in his eyes, Stoick felt the same way. We made our way down to the docks where Gobber, Mildew and a small crew were waiting for us. After we shoved off, things got more tense and lifeless. No one knew what to say, we just sailed the ship into the open ocean away from the village. Stoick, Gobber and I looked back one more time before the island disappeared from sight.

"She'll make it Stoick. Remember Hiccup just as strong and stubborn as you were, in her own way anyway." Gobber said putting a hand on the chief's shoulder.

I couldn't find anything to say. All I could do was stand and wait for us to go over what the plan was and wait for us to find what we came looking for. It was definitely going to be dangerous, but if would save Hiccup and the dragons, it would be worth it.

## 54. Chapter 54

### Chapter 54

The crew rowed the ship in silence. I wished I could say the same for the old man.

"Well this is an outrage." Mildew complained. "I dug up all the flowers, I did my part."

"We're all out here because of you Mildew. If we have to put our lives at risk, then so do you." I said angrily.

"You have no proof Stoick. You can't blame me every time something goes a miss with your precious dragons." He said tauntingly.

Astrid sneered at him and looked like she was ready to tackle him. Fortunately for him, Gobber spoke up.

"Alright Stoick what's the plan?"

"Astrid, when Gobber and I secure the Scauldron's head, Sven will wedge its jaw open, we'll need you toâ€¦"

"Drain the poison into this bucket, got it, let's get started." Astrid spoke up taking command.

I beamed at her with pride. Now I knew why Hiccup had for her second in command. At least I knew that my daughter would be great leader someday, with Astrid as her second in command, I didn't think there was anything that would be able to stand up to our people. Astrid was our best solider among the youth and Hiccup was observant and very optimistic and very tactful, and had a bright creative mind and skills of leadership that I never thought would be useful. She was just full of surprises, but what I was most proud of her for was the love she held for everyone close to her. She was going to be a great chief one day.

"This is what Scauldrons eat." Astrid called out shaking me from my thoughts. "It'll draw them, to the boat." She said dumping them into the water.

Hours passed and nothing happened and some of the crew were starting to doubt that anything was coming.

"This isn't working, it was stupid idea to begin with." Mildew snapped.

Astrid balled her fists and almost lunged at him but I stopped her. "Easy Astrid, that's not why we're here."

"But that is." Gobber said looking over the side.

We all looked over and saw a enormous green figure flying under the surface under the water. We knew what it was without even having to guess.

"Scauldron." I breathed.

"I may have to change my skivvies again." Gobber said with a small tremble in his voice.

"We need to lure the Scauldron up on deck." Astrid said dumping the remaining flowers on the deck.

"Oh that's great, get on the ship where it can have at us all!" Mildew bellowed.

"Belt up Mildew! This is all your fault if you want anybody to blame, blame yourself." Astrid snapped.

"Gobber secure its neck with this!" I shouted throwing him a line. "I'll lasso its horn!"



We stood at the bow for a minute without any sign of it. "Where did it go?" Gobber asked. But that was a question that had everybody nervous. There was no telling where it was and we couldn't see anything below the surface in the dark.

Suddenly the ship was tossed in the air and everybody held on like Hel was trying to drag them to the underworld. At that moment the Scauldron poked its head over the bow of the ship. Gobber and I rushed to secure it.

"I've got the bucket." Astrid called.

"Careful Astrid, you don't want to get that venom in you!" I called to her. I didn't even want to think about how it would destroy Hiccup if she lost the one she looked to as a sister.

"Yes I know Sir, I'll be dead in twenty four hours."

Sven managed to get the barrel in his mouth but the beast crushed it in its maw. Out of the corner of my eye I saw the beast's massive tail coming in.

"Sven look out!" I called pushing him out of the way.

I was caught on the tail then thrust up against the mast. But managed to secure it and myself to the sail bar.

"Astrid, grab Stoick's line!" Gobber called to her.

Astrid dropped the bucket and moved to grab the rope.

"Pull him in, use the mast to wedge his jaw open!" I called out from above.

Astrid and Gobber managed to pull in the beast's massive head and wedge his jaw open at the mast. Mildew fortunately was already there.

"Mildew grab the bucket!" I called to him.

"Hold on, it's one thing for me toâ€¦" he tried to object.

"Grab the bucket or I'll throw you overboard myself!" I threatened.

I wasn't going to lose my daughter's life or the lives of any of the dragons because of the old man's stubborn hatred of the dragons.

Hesitantly, he picked up the bucket but before he could do anything, the Scauldron readied to fire.

"Everyone take cover!" I called.

Everyone hid behind anything that would shield them from the boiling water. The tail pulled and I was thrown into the ocean. Sven pulled me back into the boat and I saw Astrid and Gobber at the aft of the ship.

"He's gone." Astrid groaned.

"And you can bet the last place he's coming back to is this ship." Gobber said sullenly but out of breathe.

"We didn't get the venom." I said feeling defeated.

We heard a scream from behind and saw Mildew on the deck with a swollen behind.

"Yes we did." Astrid said with a grin.

"Get this poison out of me!" Mildew cried.

"Oh we will." Astrid said deviously.

We spent the next few hours rowing back to Berk. Once there, we took Mildew to the forge and got him ready for well, to have the poison 'extracted'. Gobber reached for his, 'tool' and readied for the 'extraction'.

"Wait, wait , wait, isn't there something, a little smaller you could use?" Mildew asked nervously.

"Probably." Gobber said flatly.

He then drove the 'tool' into Mildew rear. He let out a loud shriek that would have waked the dead. Gobber gave the venom to Astrid and went into the forest to scream. Of all the thi9ngs he had seen in his years, he had never seen anything as disturbing as the old man's bare behind.

Astrid and I went to Hiccup and Toothless first. Hiccup was too weak to sit up to take it herself, so I held up her head while Astrid poured a small amount of the venom into her mouth. She laid back down and started to breathe a little easier. We then gave a small amount of the poison to Toothless and then Astrid left to give the venom to the rest of the dragons.

I stayed with Hiccup and watched her only leaving to check on Thornado. I went to check on him every few minutes and was going back in when Gobber said he would watch over Hiccup.

"Relax old friend, it's gonna be okay." He said putting a hand on my shoulder.

He went inside and up to Hiccup's room. I stayed outside and watched over Thornado. I would look up at Hiccup's window every now and again waiting for some sign that she was awake.

"Dad, they're coming around." I heard from behind me.

I looked behind me and saw my daughter standing with Toothless, both looking just as healthy and well as the day they were born.

I grabbed my daughter and hugged her like she was the only thing keeping me alive.

"Dad, I can't breathe.' Hiccup groaned as I put her down.

"How are you feeling love?" she asked putting her hand on Toothless' snout.

Toothless let out a small plasma blast and lit the sky with a luminescent glow. I turned and saw Thornado up on his feet again and ready for anything.

"Thornado." I cheered putting my head against his.

Everyone and their dragons were safe. Everything was as it should be. Everyone was safe, it was a good feeling.

## 55. Chapter 55

### Chapter 55

Hiccup and I were settled in the cove close together, my wing over her small frame and her head rubbing against mine. It was just before dawn and that is why we were there, to watch the sunrise in our special place, the place where we met and fell in love.

"You know when I was a kid I would have given anything to be like the other kids. But my Mom always told me that the gods made me as I am for a reason and that reason may not become apparent now or even in ten years but being different doesn't mean I was a mistake, it only means that there will be things that only I would be able to do and I was made just that purpose and that I was special." She said looking me in the eye with admiration shining in them.

"She was right, you have done things for all of us, dragons and humans alike, things that none of us could ever hope to do in our wildest dreams." I replied looking back beaming with pride for what she had done for both our people.

"I couldn't have done any of it without you." She said nudging me head.

"I couldn't have done anything I have without you either." I replied returning the gesture.

As we talked, the sun began to peek out from behind the trees overlooking the cove. We watched as the rising sun painted the skies a rosy shade of pink, an illuminating shade of orange and a beautiful shade of yellow. And to make it even more breathe taking, the way the light danced on Hiccup's scales made her look like a statue made of precious black diamonds.

We shared a glance and then she moved closer to me and I leaned down toward her and she started to lean towards me and we closed the distance between us. She tasted just the same as she had the first time we kissed. I could just hold on to that taste forever, but like all things it ended when we heard Stormfly and Astrid come to the cove.

"Hiccup, your father needs you in the village. The Meatheads are on their way to Berk." Astrid said from on top of Stormfly.

Hiccup changed into her human form and told Astrid she and I were on our way. After they were gone, she changed back and we took off for

the village. Once we made it back, she changed into her human form again and went to ask her Dad why the other tribe was coming.

"Dad, I know the Meathead tribe is a close friend to our tribe, but why are they coming over?" she asked nervously.

"It's Thuggory's birthday and Maggadon wants to celebrate his son's coming of age day here because he knows it's your birthday today as well." Stoick explained just as unsure. "He thought it would a good time for a visit as any given we haven't had any visits with each other in some time."

"I just hope Thuggory is over his obsession with me." Hiccup said rubbing the back of her neck. "He kind drove me to my breaking point last time he was here."

"I know lass, but please this time try to just grin and bear this time if he hasn't, show them a little good faith." Her father pleaded.

"I'll do my best." Hiccup promised.

I was curious about she meant by his 'obsession' over her. After her father left to help finish the final preparations she went up to our room and sat down by her desk. I nudged her arm and gave her a quizzical look.

She seemed to understand what I was wondering and changed into her dragon form.

"Let me guess, you are wondering about Thuggory." She said raising an eyebrow.

"You know me so well." I said settling down.

"Well, when we were kids, Thuggory and the other members of the Meathead tribe would come over to visit from time to time. At first Thuggory would use me as a play thing but as we got older he sort of started to creep me out the way he would look at me, the way he would talk to me, and then it got to the point where he would start to come on to me like I was a prize that he thought he take anytime he wanted." She said shifting uncomfortably as she settled next to me.

"Well like your father said, maybe he has gotten over it and maybe after all this time he has gotten over you." I said hoping to calm her nerves.

"That's what I'm hoping for, or if not, I'm hoping that I can stay invisible until he has to leave." She said clearly still nerve racked. "I don't know who I'd rather deal with, Dagur the Deranged or Thuggory the Obsessive Crusher."

"I'm not telling you how you should approach this, but maybe your father's right, maybe you try and grin and bare it. You know I'm always here for you and no matter what, nothing could ever make me love you any less." I said nudging her head.

She returned the gesture and seemed to feel more at ease. "Thanks love."

Presently her father came up stairs. "Hiccup, there is something else. The Meatheads don't know that you can change into a Night Fury so it's a good idea that you keep it that way for now. If the Meatheads knew that you could change into a dragon it could be seen as a threat if they thought we could use you as a weapon against them." He explained.

She changed into her human form and told her father she understood. "But do we have to hide the dragons too?"

"I don't think we have to worry. For some reason the Meatheads never had any dragon problems for years so they don't seem to think too bad of them. So I think we're safe with them out and about, just as long as you can keep them under control." He explained easing her mind.

"That's good, because I don't think my nerves could take another run like the Berserker fiasco." she said brushing her hair out of her face in relief.

"But we still need to be careful, make sure Snotlout and the twins don't do anything stupid." He warned.

"I'll do my best." Hiccup promised.

Her father then turned and headed back out. "Guess we don't have to hide too much." She said rubbing my head.

"I still can't believe I'm turning sixteen today. Thank goodness Thuggory is turning eighteen and will have to marry someone else soon." She said with relief.

We then spent the next few hours helping the village prepare for the Meathead tribe's arrival. Some of the other villagers would wish Hiccup a happy birthday from time to time, others seemed too busy to even notice her, but she didn't seem too bothered by it. By the time the village had finished the preparations it was almost high noon.

Hiccup and I went for one last flight around the island before the Meatheads arrived. Even though she was turning sixteen, she didn't look any different than she did last year. I was kind of glad. I guess with her being part dragon now, her aging had been slowed down. I hoped to myself that it was true, dragons can live for centuries and still be young, where as humans live for a few decades and they die of old age if they are lucky. Even if it was from natural causes, I don't think I'd ever be ready to say good bye to Hiccup.

We had just passed Raven Point on the way back when we heard a horn signaling the Meatheads were here.

"Thor give me strength." Hiccup prayed under her breath.

She changed in midair and landed on my back. It wasn't the first time she rode bare back but it was the first time she changed while she was still in the air. So needless to say it did startle me because I thought I wouldn't catch her. I guess all those trust exercises were helping after all.

We made it back to the village just in time to meet Maggadon and his son, Thuggory. I really couldn't tell which was which. Both were really tall, stout and burly. For me it all just guessing until turned to look at Hiccup and she turned away to avoid him looking at her. That's how I figured the one with long black hair tied up in a matted mess and axe strapped to his back was Thuggory.

As he looked at Hiccup and Hiccup avoided his gaze, he got a look in his eyes that I didn't like. It was the look of a predator, the same look the Red Death had in his eyes when he took control of Dragon Island. If I had that look in his eyes at my Hiccup, I knew from the start I was going to have to stay close to her until they were gone.

Hiccup and I went to meet her father and to greet Maggadon.

"Ah, there she is, the Great Dragon Trainer. Nice to see you again Hiccup." Maggadon said shaking her hand heartedly. "I have to say when I first saw you as a little girl I never would have guessed that you would be the one to bring the war to an end. Imagine my surprise when I heard that the one who had tamed the dragons was Stoick's bright little prodigy." He said chuckling. "You must so proud of her Stoick. I imagine Valhallarama would be proud too if she could be with us today, rest her soul."

"Thank you Maggadon and you are right I am pretty proud of her for what she has done for us. I couldn't have wished for a better daughter." Stoick said proudly putting his hand around her shoulder.

I could see Hiccup was getting uncomfortable. Hiccup was normally used to being the one in the background only needing to be the center of attention when necessary. Right now, she looked like she was ready to run. I nudged her arm hoping to get the others' attention.

"And who would this fine beast be?" Maggadon asked looking down at me in surprise.

"This is Toothless, my lâ€™ my Night Fury." Hiccup quickly corrected herself.

"Well beard of Thor, a Night Fury!" Maggadon exclaimed. "A real Night Fury right in front of me! I was starting to think they were a myth. He truly is a magnificent specimen, you really have quite the daughter if she could tame the most dangerous dragon in the archipelago." He said looking over me over and over again. Now I how Hiccup felt, but as long as that Thuggory boy kept his eyes to himself, I was alright.

"Thank you Maggadon." Hiccup said putting her hand on my head.

Everyone headed for the Great Hall. When the doors opened, a celebration welcomed Hiccup and Thuggory. Roses were wrapped around the pillars but from the ceiling hung banners congratulating Thuggory on his coming of age. Everyone sat around the table and started chatting with their Meathead neighbors. Everyone seemed in good spirits but the way Thuggory kept looking at Hiccup was still making me uneasy and I could tell that Hiccup was feeling the same way.

I sat close to Hiccup while her, her father, Maggadon, and Thuggory ate.

"So, Hiccup I heard you turn sixteen today, right?" Thuggory asked.

"Yes, it's my birthday too." Hiccup answered nervously avoiding his eyes again.

"You know it won't be too much longer until you're of age yourself. Have you thought about whom you might want as a suitor when it's time?" he asked cocking an eye brow.

"As a matter of fact I have and he is someone I really care about." Hiccup said hoping to get him to stop and hide the fact that she and I were mates, not official yet but still we were loyal to each other as good as any.

It stung to know that we had to hide our love from the people Hiccup's father trusted but he was right. If they knew it might have been seen as a threat. So for now it was like our love was there.

"Oh I get, playing hard to get. Well I love playing games." He said putting his arm around her shoulder.

I felt a burning hot wave flash through my body. Here he was trying to court my Hiccup, and I had just about had enough. But Hiccup didn't give in.

"No, I'm serious. He lives here on the island." Hiccup said brushing him off.

"So who is it?" Thuggory asked suspiciously.

I knew Hiccup was going to have to lie and it did hurt to know that but it was for the good of the tribe so I bit my tongue. Besides, she and I could make up for it later.

"Fishlegs." Hiccup blurted out.

"You mean that husky bookworm? The one who prefers to stay out of the fight rather than facing it like a man?" Thuggory asked flabbergasted.

"Yes. He may not be the bravest but he's sweet and has a sharp wit." Hiccup said looking at me with a look of apology in her eyes.

I returned it saying it was alright. The feast went on for another hour or so and Hiccup continued to brush Thuggory away. After everyone was done we left the Great Hall.

"Hey Stoick, I was wondering if we could all see how well your daughter trains these dragons. After everything I have heard I am anxious to see how she does it." Maggadon asked with curiosity.

"I don't see any harm in it. I'm sure Hiccup would be delighted to give a demonstration." Stoick said putting his hand on Hiccup's shoulder.

I could see Hiccup was getting uncomfortable again. Maggadon was fawning over her and Stoick was putting her out there like she was some kind of trophy. I imagined when Hiccup said she wanted her father to be proud of her this wasn't what she had in mind. But I could tell Hiccup was getting uncomfortable the way Maggadon was fawning over her and the Thuggory was coming on to her. I got a really bad feeling in the pit of my stomach.

When we got to the academy, I tried to follow her in but Stoick stopped me. "Uh-ah Toothless, not this time. She'll be fine." He said closing the door. I walked with him to his seat and sat where I could see everything and be ready to jump in when she needed me.

Stoick then turned to Astrid and asked to send in a Spiked One for Hiccup to demonstrate with. After a few minutes, the Spiked One flew in through the door and landed in front of Hiccup. Hiccup did look a little nervous but she remained calm and approached to Spiked One slowly. But something didn't seem right, the Spiked One was riled up for some reason and didn't look like it wanted to be bothered with right now. I tried to get that message across to Stoick, but he didn't even look at me.

All I could do was watch. Hiccup remained calm and made slow steps making her way to the Spiked One's tail. Slowly with each step my heart began to beat faster and faster, I was thinking of all kinds of way that this could go wrong. But Hiccup had been in worse situations before so I had to trust her to be able to handle this.

Hiccup began to speak calmly and quietly to the Spiked One and came close enough to touch its tail. As soon as her hand touched its tail, it seemed to relax and lost all hostility. Hiccup smoothed the tail spikes down and moved slowly forward to the head and gently laid her hand on its snout.

The crowd was cheered at what they had just seen. A young girl training a wild dragon, that to them was spectacle in its self. To Hiccup, it was an everyday thing, training the dragons on the island is how she and I kept the peace with the help of the other riders and their dragons.

"Well done Stoick, your daughter will make a fine chief someday." Maggadon congratulated warmly.

"Yes, yes she will." Stoick beamed.

The gate was opened and I raced to meet Hiccup. The Spiked One flew off back towards Berk without any problems. Hiccup embraced me and told me she was okay.

"Well done lass, that was one of the most incredible performances I have ever seen. I never thought anyone would have the guts to try and train a dragon but you my dear are a real prodigy." Maggadon said shaking her hand heartedly.

"Thank you." Hiccup said taking her hand back. "Well if nobody needs me right now, I think I'd better go make sure the twins aren't getting into trouble." Hiccup said walking toward me.

She climbed on my back and we flew toward the village. "Whew, I'm just glad to get away." She breathed when we made it to the



village.

## 56. Chapter 56

### Chapter 56

After we made it to the middle of town she climbed out of the saddle and we took a walk around the plaza looking for the twins. We found them hanging upside down in their house. Not that unusual but still it never hurt to make sure they weren't doing anything stupid.

Once we cleared them, we thought it would be nice to go relax in the cove for a while. I turned for her to climb into the saddle but she declined.

"How about we take the long way love, you know walk?" she offered. "It might be nice to look around the forest for a change instead of flying over it don't you think?"

I had to admit, it would be nice. So we started walking toward the forest and into the trees. We walked for a few minutes and we stopped at a small clearing in the trees. The sun's light was painting the leaves a shade of light emerald green, just like Hiccup's eyes when the light would hit them just right.

"Beautiful, isn't it?" she asked me. I nudged her arm in agreement.

We continued on toward the cove. When we made it, we made our way down and settled by the water's edge. She rested against my side and I settled my wing over her. She seemed more at ease.

"Let's just hope we'll be here long enough until the Meatheads go home. Maggadon's nice and all, but the way was putting me on the spot was really unnerving and Thuggory has gotten worse since the last time we met." Hiccup breathed. "You'd think by now he'd know when to take a hint."

I nodded. "Oh I forgot something in the village. Just stay here love, I'll come back soon." She said getting up.

I nipped at her sleeve. "It's alright Toothless, I'll be okay. I've been through these woods before, I know my way back. I'll be back soon." She said heading for the entrance.

I stayed put but the uneasy feeling came back. I wanted to follow but Hiccup was right, she knew her way around the island, and she could change into a dragon if she needed to get away or defend herself. I tried to settle down but I couldn't shake the uneasiness. Instead I closed my eyes and breathed to calm my nerves. Eventually, I fell into a light sleep.

## 57. Chapter 57

### Chapter 57

I walked around the forest slowly, enjoying the view of the sun's light in the trees and the warm breeze blowing through everything. It

was a beautiful day, it was on days like this I wish Toothless and I could have the day to us. I couldn't have wished for a more beautiful day on my birthday. The only thing that made it uneasy is Thuggory and his obsessive crush on me. At least now he was of age and would have to marry someone else soon.

I had made it a couple of miles from the cove when I heard twigs snapping and foliage rustling. I turned around with my hand on the knife I carried in my belt, ready for whatever it was. When nothing happened, I thought it was just some small animals. I took a few more steps and suddenly I felt some one grab me from behind. Their hand was on my mouth and the other one was keeping my hands from reaching my knife.

I tried to scream but my attackers hand muffled my cries. I couldn't see behind me but after about a minute, I was pinned with my back to a tree and I finally saw who it was, Thuggory.

"Now that we are finally alone, how about we have some fun?" he said mischievously.

"Get your hands off me." I growled.

"Or you'll do what?" he said tauntingly.

I reached for my belt to grab my knife but he was quicker than me and threw away. I tried pushing him off but he pinned me to the tree. He grabbed my wrists, hard, it felt like if he held them any tighter they would break.

Finally, I managed to scream, but only for a second because Thuggory punched me in the throat. My scream was cut short and now I could hardly breathe. I was struggling to get air in my lungs and Thuggory was trying to get his hands on me, but I kept fighting. I was praying that somebody heard me. But every second dragged on like eternity, I was starting to lose hope that anyone was coming.

## 58. Chapter 58

### Chapter 58

I was dozing when I heard Hiccup scream, but only for a second. It was like something had cut her off. I didn't know if she was in trouble or not, but I wasn't taking any chances. I got up and flew in the direction the scream came from.

I only flew a couple miles and I caught sight of her and when I saw her, my fire flared in my chest. That Thuggory had her pinned to a tree and had his lips on hers. She was fighting him but he had her immobilized.

I let a shriek and dove into the trees. I blew a plasma blast and knocked a distance away. I ran to Hiccup and saw the bruises on her wrists and the one on her throat. Now I knew why her scream had been cut short, this beast had punched her throat. He had tried to take her from me.

Now I was furious, I wanted to slaughter this boy for what he had done, but Hiccup stopped me. Her voice was strained and forced, but

she managed to get her words out.

"No love, just take me back to the village please." She pleaded.

I looked again at the boy picking himself up off the ground, but I let Hiccup climb into the saddle. We took off to the house.

When we got there, Hiccup locked the front door and the window above her bed. When everything was locked, I looked at her again and got another good look at what he had done.

Her shirt was ripped so it now hung loosely off her shoulder, the bruise on her throat was a hue of bluish purple and black. The bruises on her wrists looked like fingers and it gave me an idea of how hard he had to be holding her.

Hiccup was crying and her body was shaking. Her sobs were hurting her throat but she couldn't help it, she had been really scared. I was angry with myself for not getting there sooner. Thuggory had crossed the line, that boy had to be taught a lesson. I begged Hiccup to open the window, she hesitantly complied and locked it back when I was out.

I flew off to find her father and Maggadon. They had to know what Thuggory had tried to do to my mate. I found them in the Great Hall laughing and enjoying themselves, oblivious to what had happened.

I ran over to the table to get her father's attention.

"What is it Toothless?" he asked with the last of a chuckle. I began jumping frantically to get him to come. "Where's Hiccup? Is she alright?" he asked realizing Hiccup wouldn't have been far behind.

I ran for the door with Stoick and Maggadon following close behind. "What do you suppose has the beast so riled up?" Maggadon asked as we made our way to the house.

"I don't know but whatever it is, Hiccup must be in trouble, otherwise Toothless wouldn't have come on his own. He never leaves Hiccup's side for more than a few minutes at a time." Stoick said with concern in his voice.

When we got to the house, the door was still locked. I jumped on the roof and started jumping on it showing Hiccup it was me and that it was safe. Hesitantly she opened the window and let me in. I made my way down the stairs and undid the latch on the door. Stoick and Maggadon came up the stairs and saw Hiccup sitting on her bed crying and looking the way she did.

Stoick was furious. "Hiccup, my daughter what happened?" he said looking at her bruises.

She tried to talk but her throat was still in pain from the punch. Her voice still sounded strained forced. Her words were barely audible. As if on cue, that beast Thuggory came into the house and up the stairs.

"Whoa Hiccup are you okay?" he asked feigning innocence.

I pulled Hiccup away and wrapped my wings around her protectively.

Everyone was confused but thank the Great Dragons Astrid came by.

"Sir, if you want to know what happened, just ask Thuggory." She said harshly.

"My son, what are you talking about?" Maggadon asked confused.

"I was out with Stormfly practicing my rescue training when I heard Hiccup scream but only for a second like something had cut her off. By the time Stormfly and I got there, I saw Toothless flying away with Hiccup on his back and when I landed, I saw her knife in a bush and Thuggory getting up, he had a scorch mark on his armor as if he had been hit with fire but not hurt. The only that would have been possible is if Toothless hit him with a plasma blast and the only reason Toothless would need to use a plasma blast was to defend Hiccup from something or someone." She explained glaring at Thuggory.

"Son, what have you done?" his father asked concerned.

Thuggory said nothing but Stoick sized up what had happened. "You tried to rape my daughter?" he spat venomously.

Thuggory was caught. I slowly unfurled my wings but didn't let Hiccup go anywhere, I stood in front of her keeping anyone who might try anything at bay. Hiccup was still crying and shaking from fear.

"Yes, I did. She was meant to be mine, we were made for each other." Thuggory said arrogantly.

My eyes slit and a deep growl escaped my mouth. Stoick looked like he was trying with every bit of concentration he had to hold his temper. Astrid grabbed her axe from her belt.

"Get out of my house, now!" Stoick roared.

Maggadon grabbed his son by the arm and had one of his guards restrain him. "Stoick I am so sorry. Had I known what my son was planning I would have never brought him. But I promise, when we get back he will be severally punished." Maggadon apologized at the docks. "Just please tell me that this doesn't change anything."

"As long as you son is kept away from my daughter." Stoick said calmed down a bit.

They shook hands one last time before Maggadon boarded his ship and sailed home. Stoick and I went back to the house to check on Hiccup. Astrid was with her rubbing her back trying to comfort her but Hiccup was still scared and upset.

"Come on Astrid. Let's let her have sometime alone." Stoick said escorting Astrid out and leaving me with Hiccup.

I sat down on my bed and Hiccup came over and hugged me tight, still crying. I healed her bruises and used a small sleep charm to calm her down. When she was asleep, I laid down and held her close to me. After everything she had been through it probably would be best if she slept it off. I nuzzled Hiccup's face and watched her for a while

longer and fell asleep myself.

## 59. Chapter 59

### Chapter 59

(four months later)

I gathered the other riders in the cove and told them to send their dragons away until called. They were curious about what I had in my mind. I told them everything would be explained soon. Once Toothless was gone, I explained that of all the things we had been training with, the one thing we hadn't thought of practicing was dragon calls.

"Well that shouldn't be a problem for you." Snotlout teased.

"Yes but I won't always be able to change into a dragon now will I?" I retorted. "Now watch."

I took a couple of breathes and let out my call. It howled through the air and echoed around the cove.

"That's why you brought us out here? To honk into the wind?" Snotlout complained again.

"Just wait Snotlout." Fishlegs calmed.

"Dragon calls, whatever."

I let out my call again. "And nothing can we go now." A call returned.

"You were saying." Astrid smirked.

Toothless flew down returning my call.

"Fine I hate to admit it, but that was pretty cool." Snotlout admitted.

"Hey I have an important question." Tuffnut spoke up.

"Is it actually important this time?" I asked feeling irritated.

"Uh, yeah it always is. Why are we doing this any way, I don't get it."

"Well first off, you never know when you're going to be separated from your dragon and the only way to communicate is to call it. Second of all it's Bork week and my Dad asked us to put on dragon air parade." I explained.

"Why do we care about this Bork guy anyway? Wasn't he a dragon killer?" Ruffnut asked bored.

"Hey Bork only killed dragons in self-defense." Fishlegs defended. "He studied them, wrote about them, lived and breathed them."

"And without him there would be no Book of Dragons." I stepped in helping support him.

"And without the Book of Dragons there'd be noâ€¦"

"Reason for you to live?" Snotlout smirked.

"Dragon Academy actually, and there would be no really cool dragon air show." I finished.

"So when we do this really cool dragon air show, who's he going to fly with?" Snotlout asked pointing to Toothless.

"I'm working on that." I sighed.

I couldn't help but feel so sorry for Toothless, he was the last Night Fury and even though I could change into one, it wasn't the same. I couldn't imagine what it must have been like being the last of my kind, all alone with no one to really talk to. It tore me up inside to know that Toothless endured all that for centuries and now that he finally had me, I could only offer him so much comfort. I found myself wishing that Toothless had other Night Furies he could be with, even if it meant that he would choose one of them over me.

It was like my mother told me about a little bird that had been hurt that I helped her nurse back to health. I loved it and wanted it to stay forever, but my mother told me something I never forgot, if you really love someone, you let them go when it is best for them. Right now, I wished I could bring that principle into play. Even if Toothless never wanted to see me again at least he would be with his own kind.

The others called their dragons and we flew back home to practice for the air parade. Toothless and I watched over everyone's progress. As I watched the other dragons working to prepare each other, the feeling of guilt I had was getting worse the more I watched the other dragons interacting with their own kind. It made me wish even more that there were other Night Furies for Toothless and I told him as much.

I was lost in thought when Astrid flew by on Stormfly. "Hey check out my Nadders, I finally got them flying in perfect formation." She said full of pride.

"Wow, yeah, that's, that's great." I replied not feeling the excitement I thought I should have been feeling.

"Hiccup?" Astrid questioned noticing my lack of enthusiasm.

"I've just been thinking, Stormfly has other Nadders, Hookfang has a whole herd of Monstrous Nightmares and Toothless has, Toothless has no one." I explained with a sigh.

"He has you and he looks pretty happy if you ask me." Astrid said pointing out the fact that I could change into a Night Fury at will.

"You know what I mean. And there's only so much that I am able to offer him, I can change into a Night Fury, but I can't always control it and he has wanted a family for so long even after he lost his

first mate and when he found me he has that chance again but we still have to wait and who knows how long it will be until we can start a family.

"And it only hurts me to know that he doesn't have other Night Furies he can be with when he can't be with me. I can't imagine what it must be like to not have others like you to turn to when you need them." I explained almost feeling the tears welling up in my eyes.

"Hiccup, Toothless will be fine." She said patting my shoulder in comfort. "Oh yeah, I almost forgot, your father and Gobber are looking for you, they want to see you in the Great Hall. They looked serious." She said flying off.

"Oh great, Happy Bork week to me." I said feeling like this day couldn't get any worse.

Paste your document here...

## 60. Chapter 60

### Chapter 60

I walked the long flight of stairs up to the Great Hall and wondered what it is that my Dad and Gobber wanted with me. I thought I should I be nervous but for some reason I wasn't. I opened the doors and walked in. My Dad, Gobber, my uncle Spitelout and other Vikings were standing around the fire pit in the center of the Great Hall.

"Okay, this is weird." I muttered to myself.

"Hiccup, come forward." My Father instructed. "And hold out your hands."

"Uh, Dad, Gobber, other scary looking Vikings, I'd just like to say, in my own defense that I cannot control Snotlout or the twins twenty four hours a day." I said thinking this had something to do with something the three of them may have done.

"This isn't about those jokers Hiccup." Gobber assured me. "It's something really good." He whispered.

"Now then, Hiccup, as you know Bork week has begun. The first one since we made peace with the dragons. So it has been decided that as of this moment all things dragon related including Bork's life's work shall be entrusted to you and the academy." My Dad explained full of pride.

I couldn't believe it, I could find the right words to say. They were entrusting me with the work of the most famous dragon observer in history. I tried to speak but nothing I could think of was a good enough expression of gratitude for what I felt about what they were doing for me.

Gobber took out a small chest and put it on the table. "This is where the Book of Dragons started." He said opening it. "Everything Bork ever wrote on the subject is in these notes. Personal thoughts, feelings, fears, even some delicious recipes."

My heart did a dance in my chest. "I don't know what to say." I said finally finding my voice. "Thank you Dad, this isâ€¦"

"Lass, this is a big part of our history, you and the dragons are a big part of our future. It's now up to you, to take care of both." My said beaming at me with pride and confidence.

I couldn't think of anything else to say. I had lost my voice again and couldn't seem to bring it back to say thank you. All I could do was take the chest and head home to read and learn what Bork learned about dragons. I hadn't felt this excited since Toothless and I flew together for the first time.

That night I was still reading and could put anything down. It was all so amazing and new to me, a new lesson and discovery with every word I almost couldn't contain my excitement. Toothless was resting on his bed as I told him about everything I was reading. I had just put down one of his notebooks when I noticed there was something embedded in the cover.

I opened it and found a bunch of folded up notes, notes on the Night Fury. "This is all on the Night Fury, it's all about you love." I said surprised at what Bork had to say about the Night Fury. "Bork didn't put any of this in the Book of Dragons. 'My studies lead me to conclude that an entire island exists teaming with mysterious Night Furies. I call this land the Isle of Night.'" I read feeling hope about what I had thought was something I couldn't do anything about. "An island, filled with Night Furies? Toothless we have to find that island. If we do, we find your family." I said finally finding some hope in bringing Toothless together with others like him.

He looked at me with hope shining in his eyes, a hope that made me even more determined to help Toothless find other Night Furies and bring home to his family.

I continued to read over the Bork notes and looked for anything that would help us find the Isle of Night. There was nothing in the notes but there was mention of a cave where Bork lived. The next day I told the others about what I had found and where I was going.

"Well, you're not going alone." Astrid said mounting Stormfly. "I'm going with you."

"Me too, I've gotta see this." Fishlegs said sounding more excited about this than I had heard him in a long time.

"Well, I'm not staying here all day." Snotlout said climbing into Hookfang's saddle.

"Do we have to go?" Ruff asked Tuff.

"I don't know, do we?" he asked turning to me.

"Yes, you have to go." I sighed feeling annoyed but at this point I really didn't care.

I was so close to bringing Toothless to his family, I had other things to think about other than Ruff and Tuff acting like mutton heads.



We flew towards the outer reaches of Berk towards Odin's shield. As we made our way there everyone had a million questions but Snotlout's was the most annoying because I had explained it before we even left the academy but I was too excited about finding Toothless' family to care.

"So let me get this straight, to find this island, we have to find Bork's cave?"

"His last known place of residence." Fishlegs answered.

"There must be something in there about the Isle of Night and where we can find it." I called out.

"Bork's notes said his cave was cut into the mountains right above Odin's shield." Fishlegs answered me.

Within minutes we came to Odin's shield and started looking.

"Wait so what are we looking for again?" Tuffnut asked.

"It's a cave, look for a big hole in the side of a mountain." Astrid answered annoyed.

"Hole, check."

"Mountain, on it."

"You know we don't have to bring them every time." Astrid said to me and I shared in her annoyance, sometimes the twins weren't the sharpest arrows in the quiver, but they have proven themselves to be pretty good riders so it was often a good idea to bring them and keep them around.

I was snapped out of my thoughts when I heard a rather loud and not so good dragon call. It was Snotlout, and who knows what he was trying to do.

"That was a Changewing call my friend." He said answering the question Fishlegs asked for me. "Surprised you didn't know that." He taunted.

"I would've if it sounded like one. This is a Changewing." He said letting out a sharp shriek.

"Bet you can't do a Thunderdrum." Snotlout scoffed.

"Please, at least challenge me." Fishlegs retorted then let a loud low echoing growl that made all our ears ring.

"Okay enough Fishlegs, that's good." I yelled getting him to stop.

We hiked on looking for anything that might be Bork's cave. I looked over a ledge and saw an opening in the mountain on the stack opposite us.

"I found an opening." I called getting the others' attention.

We prepared to take off, but a loud call stopped us. "Fishlegs, I

thought we agreed to ease up on the dragon calls." I said feeling really annoyed now.

"That wasn't me, mine's far more authentic." He answered.

In response, a Thunderdrum came flying around the bend at us.

"Head for the cave!"

But when we got there, it was just gone, like it hadn't ever even been there. But we didn't have time to search for it while we had an angry Thunderdrum chasing us.

"Snotlout, Ruff, and Tuff, you guys look for the cave opening. We'll lure the Thunderdrum away." I instructed as we took off to get him off their backs.

Fishlegs used his call again and earned us a little time, but now we had another problem, because not only did we have a Thunderdrum chasing Fishlegs, but Snotlout had gotten himself captured by a Changewing.

"Go see what you can find, we'll keep this guy busy." Astrid said obviously realizing how much this meant to me to find the cave, but I knew how much trouble each of the dragons could be and wasn't sure I should go with the rest of them being in so much trouble.

"What about Snotlout?" I said pointing to the cliff.

"Go!" Astrid pushed.

Toothless and I flew in another direction and found an opening. "Bork's cave." I breathed. "This is it, we have to hurry love." I said as we flew deeper into the cave.

## 61. Chapter 61

### Chapter 61

As we flew deeper into the cave, I could still feel a small ember of hope burning in my chest. What if I had been wrong and there were still other Dark Ones out there, and the way to find them was to find the map somewhere in the cave? I knew Hiccup was feeling the same thing but I could also sense a tiny speck of fear. She was afraid that if I found other Dark Ones I would choose another Dark One to my mate. I would never choose anyone other than my mine. There was no Dark One or any other dragon like her. I would always love her and nothing was ever going to change that. She may be half human, but even if she wasn't even part Dark One, I would love her no matter what.

When we finally came to part of the cave where it looked like someone had been, she climbed off and started looking for anything that would lead us to this Isle of Night she had read about. I ignited the small fire pit in front of me, shed some light on the subject if you will.

"Thanks love." Hiccup chirped. "What is that?" she asked herself looking at the wall in front of her. "Toothless, it's a map to the Isle of Night! We found it love. Okay I need to get this down." She

said pulling out her notebook.

As she was drawing the map, we heard the cave start to rumble. The walls started to fall apart, even the one with the map on it.

"No, no, no, no, no, come on I need more time!" she exclaimed drawing faster. "That's it, we have to get out of here." She said finishing the map.

Suddenly the wall came crashing down around us blocking the way out. The rock kept coming down, I kept Hiccup under my wing to shield her from the falling rocks, a Dark One's wings are stronger than they look.

"So this is just great. We're trapped and neither of us can use our shots without bringing the whole ceiling down." She groaned not seeing a way out.

But I knew a way. I let out a shrill cry and let travel around the cave. When it came back, I my ears twitched and I followed where it from where it came back. I nudged Hiccup into the saddle and sent out another cry. When it came back, I knew where to go. I took off and followed each cry to the exit.

"Where we going, and how are you seeing?" Hiccup asked as we twist and turned, and weaved our way through the crumbling cave.

When we made it to the exit, barely, we flew to meet up with the others. Astrid and Fishlegs kept the Thunder Bringer busy while Hiccup and I flew off the find and help her cousin get away from an Invisible One.

"Awe, you made a new friend." Hiccup teased when we found them.

"Yeah, it's not as friendly as it looks." He said back clearly sounding uncomfortable.

We chased off the Invisible One and Hiccup called for his Flame One to catch him. After he was safely in the air, we met back up with the others.

"I still can't you both survived that cave in." Astrid said when we caught up.

"Neither can I, I mean it was all Toothless. He sent out this weird sound it bounced back towards us and somehow he used it to find his way out." Hiccup explained with curiosity and excitement still present in her voice.

That's was it, as soon as this was all over I was going have to teach how to use the gift of echolocation.

"So did you find anything?" Astrid asked her.

"Only a map, to the Isle of Night!" she exclaimed.

"Nice, when do we leave?"

"First thing in the morning. By this time tomorrow love, you are

going to be knee deep in Night Furies." She said turning to me.

We looped once and flew a short distance ahead of the others. I was so excited, I hadn't felt like this since Hiccup agreed to be mine.

When we got home that night, Hiccup started copying the map and reading more about Dark Ones in the notes her father and mentor gave her.

"It says that there's a reason that there's only Night Furies on that island." She said getting my attention. "Turns out you guys aren't so friendly to other dragons. 'Herds of Night Furies can be extremely hostile to other species.'" She read. "The other kids come with me on their dragons, Well looks like it's just you and me love." She said grabbing her satchel, some food and the map.

It didn't make sense to me, for centuries, Dark Ones had always welcomed new comers with open wings. Had something changed in the centuries I had been under the Red Death's control? I guessed we would find out once we reached the Isle of Night.

"Well this is it Toothless, you're finally gonna see you're not alone." She said as she climbed into the saddle.

We took off quietly to not wake anyone in the village and flew farther and farther away from the island. As we were flying, I started getting an uneasy feeling about this whole thing. I couldn't place it, was this for real, or some sort of trap? I didn't know what to do, I didn't want to put Hiccup in danger, but she had done so much to help me find other Dark Ones and it we were already so close it seemed t late to turn back now.

I decided to see this through to the end, if anything did go wrong, I would still be able to protect Hiccup form whatever would happen. We kept flying until late in the afternoon the next day. It was late in the afternoon when we finally made it to the island.

"Relax love, trust me if this map is right, we're gonna like what we find here." She said soothing my nerves.

We walked to a ledge overlooking a small valley. "Okay, you're ready?" she asked, I nodded. "Okay, here it goes." She let out her call and waited for a response.

I t came, my heart danced in my chest. We saw a figure that looked like a Dark One come over the ledge opposite us.

"Bork was right." Hiccup breathed. "Go get 'em Toothless." She cried with excitement.

I hopped down form the ledge and was ready to go meet them, but I didn't feel right, not without Hiccup with me. I looked back at her.

"It's okay, go, go, I'm right behind you." She reassured me.

I still felt the uneasiness from last night and couldn't shake it. Something was definitely wrong, and Hiccup seemed to think the same thing.

"Toothless come back!" she called.

I turned back to meet her, but something flew and wrapped around my feet out of nowhere.

"Toothless, no!" Hiccup cried out.

She ran to reach me, but someone grabbed her and forced her to the ground.

We both fought to get loose. Then someone came into view, someone Hiccup and I hoped we would have to see again.

"Alvin." Hiccup glared. "What do want?"

"I want me own dragon trainer and from the looks of it, I've got her." Alvin sneered.

"I am not going to train your dragons Alvin." Hiccup growled as best she could.

"Oh I think you will and once you have, I'll use them to destroy Berk. Take her." He ordered.

"I don't understand, how did you do this?" Hiccup asked still in disbelief at how they managed to trick us and lure us there.

Some of the other Outcasts forced me into the rack and harness, and I kept fighting. I wasn't going to let them take Hiccup or I without a fight. I felt Hiccup being thrown into me, and she was struggling to get out of her bonds. But then she and I caught of someone we never expected to be there.

"Mildew, what are you doing here?" Hiccup asked in disbelief.

"Look at you, the brightest girl on the island and yet here you are, trapped by a silly old man and his sheep." He sneered at her.

"How could you do this?"

"You did it Hiccup, you believed our Bork notes, you followed the map we drew, you walked right into our trap. All for the love of a dragon." He sneered at her mockingly. "Maybe you'll think twice next time about where you place your loyalties."

I could feel Hiccup's anger flaring, I nudged her as best I could to warn her that she had to calm down or she would change right in front of them and they would know her secret. I could feel her anger subside a little, but her anger was still there. And I knew it wasn't just the old man and Alvin she was angry at. She was angry at herself for falling for this. She wanted so badly to help me find other Dark Ones she ignored her instincts that this might have been a trap, so did I and I was angry that I couldn't protect her from the trap.

Now there was nothing we could do. We were trapped and even if we could get out of our bonds, we were surrounded by others who would just rebind us all over again. I couldn't remember the last time I felt so helpless, but now was another time and I didn't know what to do.

## 62. Chapter 62

### Chapter 62

"Where's my dragon Alvin, where's Toothless?" I growled as we walked down a dark hallway.

"You'll see him soon enough. Don't you worry." He sneered in reply.

"You know I have to admit, luring me and Toothless to the Isle of Night, building a fake Night Fury, not bad." I said feeling angry, but none the less impressed.

"Huh, not bad, says the sixteen year old girl in maniacal." He sneered again.

"But turning Mildew into an Outcast, using him against us. Come on Alvin that's low hanging fruit even for you."

"No thinks you're funny girl, now keep moving." Savage barking pushing me forward.

As we continued down the hallway, we stopped in front of a few different dragon cages, each one bringing back bad memories but none the less ones I was familiar with. The Whispering Death, the Scauldron and the Changewing.

The good thing was that it didn't look like the Outcasts had made any progress in getting a handle on them and I told them as much.

"Well that's why you're here. Welcome to your new job Hiccup." Alvin said as if he expected me to be celebrating.

"A job, me? As inviting as that sounds I'm gonna have to pass." I said sarcastically.

"Hiccup, Hiccup, Hiccup, why do you have to make it so difficult?" Alvin sneered in my ear.

"Really not the first time I've been asked that question." I muttered under my breath as we came to one last cage at the end of the hall. What I saw made my heart miss a beat. "Toothless!" I called to him.

He was wrapped in straps that held his wings, and limbs to his body, a muzzle and all of it was chained to the ceiling and the floor. When he heard my voice, he opened his eyes and started pulling on the chains but nothing was going to give.

"Hang in there love, I'll get you out." I called to him, then realized maybe it wasn't my best choice of words. But Alvin interrupted my thoughts.

"He's not going anywhere, neither are you. You will help me train these dragons." He said darkly.

"And if I don't?"

"Well then they're no good to me, none of them, especially yours." He sneered darker than before.

I felt a chill run through my body straight through to my heart. I looked back once more at Toothless and knew then that I was caught. Alvin was holding all the pieces, there was nothing I could do short of revealing my secret to them and if they knew that I could turn into a dragon, I didn't even want to think about it.

"Take her to her cell." Alvin barked at Savage.

Savage grabbed my arm and started dragging me away. I looked at Toothless and the look in my eyes, I hoped, would tell him that everything was going to be okay. But my heart was so heavy in my chest I thought it would stop beating at any moment. It was all my fault that Toothless and I were in this mess and now it looked like the only way out was to give Alvin what he wants.

I was quiet the entire way to my cell. "Can I get you anything, food, a cozy blanket, some warm yak milk?" Savage laughed as he threw me into my cell. "Yak milk ha!" he laughed as he walked down the hall.

When I was sure that he was gone and no one else was around I tapped into the dragon strength I had and pulled the manacles off me. It did still hurt but nothing hurt worse knowing the one I care about most in my life was locked up somewhere on Outcast Island and if Alvin didn't get what he wanted, my heart stopped. I didn't want to think about it. I didn't care what happened to me, but I could never live with myself if I lost Toothless.

I sank to my knees and started to cry. I could feel the tears burning my eyes and skin and my body racked with sobs. Mildew was right, this was all my fault.

When my tears finally dried up I grabbed the connecting piece of the manacles and broke the restraining parts off and started using the connecting piece to try and pick the lock on my cell. I had to get out and get to Toothless. As I was pushing and prying the piece around the lock, I heard Mildew yelling.

"Alvin, I gave you what you wanted, we had a deal."

"I didn't like that deal, so I changed it." Alvin sneered.

They stopped in front of the cell directly across from mine. "Oh, I believe you two know each other." Savage smirked. "Don't get too chummy, Mildew's hours are numbered, much like you and the Night Fury."

"No what are you doing with me Fungus?" Mildew cried out in alarm as Alvin snatched his sheep from him.

"Preparing your final meal, it's lamb." Alvin sneered.

"Fungus! No!" Mildew cried as his cell door slammed.

"Berkians, still as dumb as the day I left." Alvin smirked.

"What have I done?" Mildew said his voice filled with regret.

I didn't know whether to be sad for him because now he knows how I felt all those times he tried to take Toothless from me, or angry because he's the one who got us into this mess in the first place and now he was getting what he deserve.

"I am so sorry Fungus." He moaned.

"It hurts doesn't it?" I barked at him. "Losing someone you love, knowing you'll probably never see them again."

"You don't know what you're talking about." Mildew barked back.

"I don't! How dare you!" I yelled at him trying to keep my anger under control but he had just seriously hit me on a sensitive subject. "You have no idea what the Outcasts have put me through, me personally! The Outcasts took my mother away from me." I yelled feeling the tears start to come to my eyes again. If my anger couldn't come out as my dragon form, it had to come out as tears. "And now because of you, the one I care about most in my life is locked up somewhere on this Thor forsaken island and if I don't give Alvin what he wants, I'll lose him, just like I lost her. But what do you care, you wanted this and you got everything you deserve."

I turned away from him and kneeled against the wall at the back of my cell remembering what Alvin had done to my mother and now what he threatened to do to Toothless. I almost died when I lost my mother and if I lost Toothless to the same monster, it would be too much. After all my tears dried up I grabbed the connecting piece and started picking at the lock again. While I was trying to get it to work, it snapped in two.

"No!" I cried throwing the broken piece across my cell.

I wasn't ready to give up. I grabbed a rock and started digging in my cell. I was at it for maybe an hour when Mildew finally said something.

"Really this is so hard to watch." He groaned.

"What now?" I barked at him.

"Well I just thought that Stoick raised a smarter girl than this. You'll never save your dragon by sitting in this cell digging in the dirt. You need to go get him and soon."

"And how would you suggest I do that?" I said feeling annoyed that he was just pointing out the obvious.

"By giving Alvin what he wants."

At first I thought Mildew was crazy, but maybe was onto something. Alvin may want me to train his dragons, but the one thing he loved most was to see his prisoners break. And that gave me an idea. I didn't like it, but it was the only way to save Toothless.



## Chapter 63

After I saw my Hiccup chained and calling out for me, I thought I could break my bonds but these weren't like the last ones, there was nothing for me to push against so I couldn't get any force behind my pushes to break them. Hiccup called to me saying she'd get me out, but what she didn't understand is that I wanted her to get out, I didn't care what happened to me as long as she was safe.

After one of our captors dragged her away, I came up with a plan to escape so I could get to her and get us both out of this Draconic forsaken island. I shut my eyes and didn't take any food or water. I remained unmoving for hours. I was starting to feel like it wouldn't work but I had to be patient. It was like my father had told me when I was a hatchling, all good things to those who wait.

It was several hours later, but the lackwits who were trying to get me to eat finally removed the muzzle. That was all I needed. I let a plasma blast and ripped the straps around my upper and lower body and broke the chains that were hanging me. I stalked towards my guards, they let me, they knew they would never stand a chance against me. But to be on the safe side, I flicked my tail and knocked them to the ground unconscious.

After I made my way out of the prison, I went on foot with my nose to the ground looking for Hiccup's scent. It was pretty difficult to sort her scent out from among the others of all the other humans who had walked around this island. Eventually I found her scent it led me to another prison and through that one. Her scent was strong inside which means she hadn't been there not too long ago. But there was another scent following hers, the old man, why would he be following her?

No time to think about it, I kept going through the prison and back out again. Her scent grew stronger near a lava field but then it just disappeared, like she just vanished, or she took flight. But she wouldn't risk changing here and being seen would she? But then I got a look at all the dragons in the lava field and realized she didn't change, she got help. I felt some sense of relief but I wouldn't be completely at ease until she was back safe with me.

I called out for her, but there was no reply. If she were in her dragon form, she would have heard me, but if she got help from another dragon and in the air, it was going to be a little more difficult to find her. Then it struck me, she had gotten out was doing what I had gotten out to do, she was going to help me escape, but she didn't know that I was already out and looking for her. But I did know where she would be going. Just one problem, I didn't know the way back.

Now what? I took to the air and got as far as I could on sights alone, but eventually, I had to land again and then it was nose back towards the ground. By dawn I was beginning to think she and I would never find each other. But then I heard something that made my heart soar. Her call, Hiccup was calling me. I called back and took to the sky in the direction from where the call came. I flew only a short distance and saw her and the rest of the riders on their dragons. We all landed and Hiccup and I raced to each other.

"Toothless!" I knocked to the ground in my embrace before she could

say my name. "Are you alright love? I am so sorry Toothless, this was all my fault."

I was about to reassure her that she had nothing to blame herself for but then I caught scent of someone I hoped would never have caught up to us.

"What the matter love?"

"Hey there girl, you weren't going to leave before we finished our business were ya?" the man who had taken Hiccup's mother from her taunted. I felt Hiccup's anger flare and this time she couldn't control it. "That's what I would expect from Stoick's little runt."

That did it, she was too angry. I finally with her, but I knew what was going to happen. Stoick tried to talk to her but there was no stopping her now. She jumped on my back and we took to the air. I had to make this beast pay for what he did and Hiccup had her own score to settle. When we reached the height of our climb she jumped from the saddle and changed into her dragon form just before she reached the ground. She glided over the shocked faces of the Outcasts, they couldn't believe what they had just seen. One glance at the old man told me he couldn't either. She dove straight for the beast and would have gotten to him if the others hadn't entangled her with the same demon-weapons she used when she captured me. I flew down to save her but I was caught too. We landed close together, Hiccup couldn't change back, she was still too angry and even if she could she wouldn't have been able to get away.

Suddenly all the other dragons flew in and drove the Outcasts away. The two Spined Ones and the Flame One grabbed hold of the ropes and carried us to where the others were waiting for us. Once Hiccup was free she changed back into her human form.

"What happened?" she asked in surprise.

"The dragons saved you on their own." Fishlegs said in surprise as well.

"Looks like they took their training to a whole new level." Astrid said in admiration.

"We can catch up later, right now we need to get out of here." Stoick said as we all rushed to get out.

There was no time for Hiccup to climb into the saddle, she back into her dragon form and we both took to the skies together. We flying over the island when Hiccup heard the old man screaming like he was in distress. She looked back and saw he was falling off the dragon her mentor was riding.

"Mildew!" she called. He couldn't understand her, nor could I for different reasons.

Why did she suddenly care about the old man? The old man let go of the Spined One's tail and fell from the sky. Hiccup pivoted and turned back around. She swooped in close to grab him but arrow shot in her direction. I knocked her out of the way and felt one graze my back.

"Toothless!"

"I'm alright."

"Go Hiccup, you have to leave me." The old man called from below.

"He's right lass, we can't help him now." Her father reasoned with her.

I could see the regret in her eyes but she turned around and we all flew away from the island. I was still confused about why she wanted to save the one who had gotten us captured in the first place and I asked her as much.

"He helped me escape so I could get to you and save you." She said with a small tear in her eye.

"I see, I'm sorry."

"I owed him, I should have gone back for him."

"There's just some things you can't change, you are not the one to blame here." I soothed as we flew over the ocean for home.

"But it is my fault we were kidnapped in the first place. If I hadn't been so obsessed with finding other Night Furies so that you wouldn't be so lonely, then none of this would have happened."

"Hiccup, what ever made you think that I was lonely?" I questioned.

"All the other dragons have others just like them to be with and I couldn't help but feel that maybe you wanted to be with your family."

"Oh Hiccup, you are my family, you and your father and all the other riders and their dragons. Blood doesn't make a family Hiccup, love does. If you truly love someone they are your family. Family are the ones you care about the most. After I found you Hiccup, I found all the family I would ever need." I said reassuring her that she was all I ever needed.

"What about other Night Furies, don't you ever wish you could meet others like you?"

"There are times where I miss have others like me, but then I look at you and I know that I am never alone, because you are the one I care about most in my life."

"I love you too." She cooed.

We flew until early afternoon when we made it home. Hiccup and I went straight to our room and she rubbed some medicine on my back from where the arrow grazed me.

"That should do it love." She said putting her herbs away.

She then turned to her satchel and took out the map she had drawn.

She continued to look at it as she walked down the stairs to the fire pit. I could see the remnants of sadness and regret in her eyes.

"I'm sorry this map wasn't the real thing love." She said as she tossed into the fire. "But hey, there's nothing wrong with being one of a kind right?" she said brightening up.

I could see the rosy color returning to her cheeks and the shine return to her eyes. Astrid came to the door and shooed us out for the parade. Hiccup and I went outside and she changed into her dragon form. She and I led the parade through the skies over the village. I can't remember the last time I had this much fun putting on a display. The parade ended with the show of acrobatic displays from all the dragons and their riders and with Hiccup and I dazzling the villagers with our show in sync displays.

That night Hiccup slept in her dragon form next to me.

"Toothless, I have a question I have been wondering for a while."

"What is it?" I asked draping my wing over her.

"If by some miracle, your first mate could come back, would you choose her over me?" I could sense the uneasiness in her question.

"While I may never truly forget her, and she will always hold a place in my heart, you are my mate now and I will never leave you for anyone even my first mate. Because she would want me to be true to my vows to the one I promised I would be with forever. I love you Hiccup, and I would never leave you for anyone." I said wrapping my wing tighter and bringing her closer to me.

"And I will never leave you either." She said rubbing her head against mine.

I turned my head and she faced me. We shared a gaze for no more than a few seconds and we closed the distance between us in a kiss. I felt the same warm waves wash over me. Hiccup became more passionate with her kiss. When at last we broke, she had had to catch her breath.

"I think we should get some sleep, we have a long day ahead of us tomorrow." I teased nudging her shoulder.

"Thank you dragon obvious." She giggled settling closer to me.

We rested our heads next to each other and we both fell into a deep and cozy sleep.

## 64. Chapter 64

### Chapter 64

(a month later)

"Ah the ceremonial belt, is it that time of year again?" I asked feeling a steady uneasiness about tomorrow.

"Yep, tomorrow's the annual treaty signing with the Berserker tribe." Dad grunted as Gobber tightened his belt.

"Just please tell me that lunatic won't be here for long." I groaned.

"Dagur, oh he'll be here." Gobber groaned.

"Oh great and let me guess I have to keep all the dragons out of sight again." I gripped recalling the last treaty signing debacle. I wasn't sure if I could go through that again.

"That's right. I'm not sure how we got away with last time, but I don't think we will be able to again. Just try and make sure to keep 'all' the dragons out of sight." Dad instructed.

"When it comes to the twins and Snotlout, I can't make any promises, but I'll do my best, I can promise you that." I said rubbing the back of my neck still feeling very nervous.

Last time, we found out that Dagur was the new Berserker chief and every time he saw me he kept sending me this weird look, like I was something to eat. Not that I had time to think about a lot, because last time the twins were having issues and their Zippleback was out of control and we had fake a dragon attack to save him and keep our peace with the dragons a secret.

At least it pulled through and Dagur bought it. But now he was coming back and who knows what was going to happen this time. All I could hope for was that any and all riders didn't have any issues and that they could keep their dragons under control.

I left the house rubbing my temples and Toothless close behind with a reassuring look in his eyes that told me everything was going to be alright. I wanted to believe him but when it came to Dagur, it just really set my nerves on end.

"Come on love, we have to tell the others to get ready for Dagur. Oh, man why does the treaty have to be every year? Thor, give me strength." I groaned. "Just please don't let things get out of control this time."

When we got to the academy, I had a hard time finding my tongue and my nerves to tell them that Dagur was coming again and that it was absolutely necessary that we all hide the dragons and that any and all issues be resolved before Dagur gets here.

"Don't worry Hiccup, it won't turn out like last time." Astrid said putting a hand on my shoulder.

"It's not just that, last time Dagur was here every time he looked at me he gave me a look like I was something to eat. It made me feel the same it did the last time Thuggory was here. I just don't know if I can take it anymore.

"What if you stayed with the dragons and we kept Dagur busy?" Fishlegs offered.

"I couldn't stay hidden the entire time. If I did Dagur would wonder

where I am and I'd have to there for the annual treaty feast, because as the chief's daughter I have to make an appearance as a sign of trust." I said begrudgingly.

"Alright, well how about Toothless keeps the dragons in line while you stay in the village and we keep Dagur away from you." Astrid offered.

"Yeah, I guess that could work. Worth a shot, but just promise me one thing."

"What?"

"That when I say, get our dragons ready for another attack. But only as a last resort."

"You got it." Astrid said punching my arm.

"Thanks guys. Now let's get the dragons to the caves underneath the village. They'll be safe there and Toothless will be able to keep an eye on them. Think you can handle it love?" I asked. He gave me a look that said, 'Does a Spined One like chicken?' "Great, now let's get going." I said hopping onto the saddle.

I felt a little better, but I was still nervous about Dagur coming. I just hoped it wouldn't turn out like what happened with Thuggory.

## 65. Chapter 65

### Chapter 65

I could still feel the uneasiness about having Dagur coming over again. I didn't know what he was coming for again but my guess was that it was not good.

After rounding up all the dragons and gathering them in the caves, I nudged my head against his and said I'd be okay, but I could still feel the uneasiness.

"Promise me you'll be okay."

"I promise, and if anything happens, I can always come here."

"That's true, just promise me that it turn out like it did with Thuggory."

"I promise." A horn sounded. "I have to go, take care love." I said changing into my human form and leaving the cave.

"Please be safe my love." I heard him whisper.

'I'll do my best Toothless.' I thought to myself as I made my way to the village.

When I made it to the docks I was trying to catch my breath but at least all the dragons were safely stowed away in the caves underneath the village. As long as Toothless could keep them under control, then

wouldn't have anything to worry about.

"Did you get all the dragons out of sight?" Dad whispered to me as we watched the Berserker ships sail closer to Berk.

"Yes, Toothless is keeping an eye on them and any and all problems among the riders have been taken care of." I whispered back.

"Good. Now let's just hope Dagur doesn't intend to stay."

I kept my fingers crossed behind my back hoping the same thing. And I was also hoping that this wouldn't turn out like Thuggory. I shuddered at the memory but brushed off as Dagur's ship made it to the docks.

"Dagur, nice of you to come by for this unexpected visit." My Dad greeted.

"Actually, I'm here for another reason." Dagur sneered looking at me.

"And what would that be?" I asked feeling very nervous right now.

"Well, I never the chance to hang out with my old friend, and perhaps we can negotiate military strategy while I'm here." He said swinging his arm over my shoulder.

'Oh man.' I groaned.

"Just a friendly visit, and I'll be on my way." He said in a way that made me want to run and hide in the cove.

"Come Hiccup, we have much catching up to do." He said dragging me away.

"Help me." I whispered to my Dad. 'Please just let this day be over.' I pleaded in my thoughts.

Dagur led me into the woods and finally let me go. "So I was thinking that for now, you and I could play that little game you and I never finished when we were kids." He said bringing out his sword.

"You mean, hunter?" I asked feeling my knees start to wobble.

"Yes, you see, I never got to catch you last time and I was so close, and you didn't really put up much of fight last time. But it's been a while and you have grown since thenâ€¦" he explained eyeing me up and down. "â€¦so I'm hoping this time, you'll give me more of a challenge. And just to show I know how to play fair, I'll give you a full minute head start. So you'd better start running."

I didn't have to be told twice. I took off like Loki was at my heels. How I wanted to change into my dragon form and go hide in the caves with Toothless, but if I changed now Dagur would see me for sure. I groaned. Sometimes the gods just loved to pick on me.

I kept running looking for a place to hide. I thought about hiding in the cove but if I hid there, Dagur would know about Toothless for sure so I just kept running hoping my strength would hold out long

enough for me to come up with a plan.

I stopped by an old oak to catch my breath. I tried to forget that Dagur was chasing me for some sick game he loved to play every time he came over here when we were kids. It then came to mind the way he had looked at me when he said I had grown since we last played. What was he up to, and why would he look at me that way?

A horrible feeling gripped me like a grabber trap and this felt so much worse. 'Please, don't let this turn out like Thuggory. If you are watching out for me at all, please don't let this turn out like then.' I pleaded in my mind.

"Here I come Hiccup, don't make this too easy, you know I hate being bored." I heard him call out.

No time for me to take off again. I jumped and grabbed hold of the lowest branch and started climbing. Hopefully Dagur wouldn't notice me shimmying up the tree before I could get out of sight. As I made it to the middle of the tree, I watched Dagur stop under me and look around.

'Please don't see me, please don't see me, please don't see me.' I pleaded in my thoughts.

He looked around for a minute and kept going. I heaved a sigh of relief and quietly started climbing down. After my feet touched the ground I heard several twigs snap. I quickly turned around expecting to see Dagur but who I saw made my heart both dance and skip a beat.

"Toothless, what are you doing here? I'm happy to see you but you're supposed to be watching out for the other dragons." I said hugging him.

In answer to my question he nudged me onto his back and started flying back toward the village. Once I got off, he took off again and flew back toward the caves.

"Okay, weird but at least I am far away from Dagur and his sick game." I said to myself heading for the Great Hall.

After I turned the corner, I saw Dagur standing by the door.

'Are you kidding me!' I screamed in my thoughts. "Dagur, when did youâ€¦"

"I knew you'd try and make your way back to the village and beat you here. I win and you know what that means." He said running his fingers over the blade.

"Oh please don't tell me you plan to skin me." I said feeling very nervous now.

"No, why would I need yours, you're too small but that doesn't mean I don't get a trophy." Out of nowhere he grabbed a huge lock of my hair and hacked it off.

"Ow!" I cried feeling him pull my hair.



After the lock he cut was gone, I felt my head and felt that nothing had changed. I felt the underside of my hairline and realized Dagur had cut a huge amount from the underside of my hair.

"So you came all this way to play a game and hack my hair off?" I said rubbing the sore spot on my head.

"Pretty much. I don't like unfinished business and our game was not done. Now it's over and I can go." He said turning to leave. "Oh but there is one more thing."

"What?" I asked feeling very nervous.

"This." He said grabbing my arm and pulled me into a kiss.

I fought him to let me go but his grip on my arm tightened. Suddenly, we heard a shriek coming from above. Toothless was diving in and all the other dragons started flying around the village like they had when we killed them.

I felt a sense of relief and dread. Had Toothless planned the attack? Did my Dad know about this? I didn't have time to answer my questions. After I managed to wrench my arm out of Dagur's grip I ran for a shield and my knife. When I made it back, I saw Dagur about to kill a Nadder. I had to think of something fast. I saw Stormfly and got an idea. I called her and signaled her to attack Dagur.

Just before her spikes reached him, I pushed him out of the way.

"Are you alright?" I asked.

"Didn't know you cared." He said with a smirk.

I shuddered. "Come on, I'll get you to your boat."

We ran through the village passing Viking and dragon foe fighting as we made it to the dock. Toothless then jumped in the way.

"Back you fiend you, you'll not harm my friend Dagur." I said hoping to keep my intentions hidden from Dagur.

I pretended to engage Toothless as Dagur stood there in awe.

"Dagur save yourself, go!" I pretended to plead.

Dagur jumped onto his ship and he and the other Berserkers shoved off. Once they were out of sight, everything settled down.

"Great job lass. Hopefully we won't have to deal with any more unexpected visits from Dagur." My Dad chuckled.

"Thanks Dad, but I didn't plan this." I said feeling awkward.

"No, we did." Astrid said coming in on Stormfly.

"I thought I said a dragon attack was to be used as a last resort." I said feeling very hot right now.

"Yes, but it was the only way to get Dagur to leave." She said.

"Besides, you looked like you could use some help."

"Yeah, I thought you guys were going to keep him busy."

"Well when he dragged you off, that kind of complicated things. So we went to the caves and instructed all the dragons to follow our signals and we informed everyone about how it was to be done."

"Well, thanks anyway guys. You really helped me today."

"No problem." Astrid said flying off.

Once we were in our room I changed into my dragon form and opened my mouth to apologize to Toothless for Dagur kissing me, but he stopped me before I could even get even a single word out.

"No need to apologize." He said laying down.

"Look, I'm sorry, I don't why all these creeps keep kissing me, but if I told them that you and I were together, I don't even want to think about what they would do to you, especially Dagur."

"You know how you can make up for it?" He said mischievously.

"How?"

In answer to my question, he stood up and kissed me. At first I was a little shocked, but I melted into it and kissed him back. Of all the males who have kissed me, I would never want anyone else's but Toothless'

When we finally broke apart, he laid down on his bed and I changed into my human form and settled into my bed.

"Good night love." I said before laying down. I heard Toothless coo in reply.

Hearing him made me feel much better. I just hoped that we would be seeing Dagur the Deranged anytime soon.

## 66. Chapter 66

### Chapter 66

(six months later)

Hiccup and I were leading the other riders on another patrol around the island on a report that an Outcast ship had been spotted off shore. We wove our way in and out of the sea stacks and finally caught sight of the boat. We tried to follow but we lost sight of them. When we came to rest on a sea stack, Hiccup changed into her human form.

"How does an Outcast ship out run our dragons?" she said rubbing her temples.

"That's how." Snotlout sneered at Fishlegs.

"What did we miss?" Fishlegs asked.

"It's not what you missed, it's what we all missed!" Snotlout shouted. Hiccup and Astrid reprimanded him but it didn't seem to affect him at all. "I'm calling it like I see it, if we didn't have slow and really, really slow holding us back, I don't know maybe we'd have a chance to do what we're supposed to be doing!" he yelled again.

"Snotlout, not helping." Hiccup scolded him.

"That's a bit harsh." Astrid said irritated with his attitude.

"Guys, he does have a point." Fishlegs spoke up.

I could feel the stones dropping in Hiccup's stomach. "Fishlegs," she began to console him but he cut her off.

"No it's no big deal Hiccup. You guys keep looking, Meatlug and I will circle back and patrol the cliffs. Sure up the rear." He offered.

Anyone with a sense for hidden emotions could tell that he was masking the hurt he felt. True he rode one of the slowest dragons on Berk, but he had as much to contribute to us as any of us did. He wasn't any less important just because he wasn't as fast as the rest of us.

"Okay well, use your dragon call if you spot anything." Hiccup said before she changed back to her dragon form and took off with the others.

"Knowing you, I thought you would have put up more of a fight than that." I said as we wove through the sea stacks time and again.

"I would have, but I could tell that he was upset about what Snotlout had said. He probably just needs some time to think. It'll all be better soon, you'll see." She said as we continued to look for the Outcast ship.

We continued to search until the skies turned pink with the early hours of a sunset. Everyone, even the rest of the dragons were growing tired. We flew back to the village, the other dragons landed near their riders' homes while Hiccup and I landed near the forge.

"Hey guys, did you find your Outcast ship?" Fishlegs said as he greeted us.

"No we didn't find them." Hiccup said sounding like she could use some rest.

But it wouldn't come anytime soon. Her mentor came running looking like he had something new to share, but not to her. He was holding a sword, but there was something strange about it. He then explained how he had made it from some strange lava Meatlug had left in the forge. Hiccup was at a loss for words.

"This was made from Gronckle lava?" she asked looking like she had just gotten her energy back learning this.

"I prefer to call it Gronckle Iron. I got tired waiting for it to cool, you know what I always say, pound it while it's hot. Next thing you know, bing bang boom, and I created this little beauty." He explained obviously feeling very proud with himself.

"It's pretty, but too light. Would never hold up in battle." Astrid said trying it out.

"Exactly what I thought, until I did this," he said taking a swing at Snotlout's sword.

It sliced through it with ease, as if Snotlout's sword wasn't even there. Everyone was in awe, even I couldn't help but admire the strength of the so called 'Gronckle Iron'. It was impressive, I had to admit.

"It would go nicely on that fancy new shield of yours." Gobber said turning his attention to Hiccup.

For the past few weeks Hiccup had been working on a shield she could use to not only defend herself but also provide offense so that she would have to resort to shifting to her dragon form in battle, that way she could keep her dragon form a secret from any other potential enemies. Her skills as a blacksmith never ceased to amaze me. She may have only been trained to build traditional weapons but she had proven on many occasions that she could build more than swords and axes. What she capable of building just boggled my mind.

"Exactly what I was thinking, it could make it stronger and lighter." Hiccup said responding to her mentor's observation.

When we got back to the forge, we saw that we weren't the only ones who had found out about Gobber's new discovery. The entire village was lined up to have their weapons enhanced with the new Gronckle Iron. I took one look at Fishlegs and could see that he was starting to feel like he was good for something again.

Hiccup saw it too and I could see that she was starting to wonder if he ever want to return to the Academy and she asked me as much.

"We just have to have faith that he'll remember how much he means to us not only as a member of the team but also as our friend. He'll come back Hiccup, I know he will. I've seen the way he looks at you, he still has feelings for you, but he also understands that you and I are together and that he shouldn't come between us." I explained as we flew back to the house. "He'll be back, if not for the team then he'll come back for you Hiccup. I know you still have feelings for him."

"Yes, Fishlegs will always have a place in my heart but like you said, you and I are together and I would never ever do anything to hurt you." She said as we landed and went in to the house.

"I know." I said as she changed into her human form.

She opened the door and saw her father going through a box of things I couldn't quite see.

"Whatcha looking at Dad?" Hiccup asked.

"Some of your mother's and I's old things, from before you were born." He said holding up a silver charm.

"What's that?" Hiccup asked taking the charm from her father.

"You mother wore that the night she and I were married. It was good luck charm from her sister before she passed away. Your mother wore it to feel closer to her sister that night."

"It's beautiful. How did she wear it?" Hiccup said admiring it.

"She wore it around her boot." He explained. "See, you unlatch the rings and place around your boot then latch it back." He said putting around Hiccup leg.

"Mom didn't wear a lot of jewelry did she?"

"No, it got in the way except for this. It was the only jewelry she wore. It really meant a lot to her and I imagine it would mean lot to her if you had it." Her father said looking at her with pride and love.

"Really?" Hiccup asked looking at her mother ankle charm.

"Your mother wouldn't want it any other way."

"Thanks Dad." Hiccup said wrapping her arms around her father who returned the hug.

They broke apart after about a minute and she and I went upstairs for the night. She undid the latch and settled into bed. The look in her eyes told me she was still thinking of her mother. She really loved her and I imagine her mother really loved her too. I watched as she slowly drifted off to sleep and found myself thinking about my mother and father.

Would they be proud of the things I had done and would they be accepting of the one I love? I drifted off to sleep with these questions in mind. But didn't let them plague my thoughts for long. They were my parents, if they really loved me, they would understand.

## 67. Chapter 67

### Chapter 67

I woke with a start from another nightmare. I was in battle with Dagur and Thuggory. They were all trying to, not kill me, but get passed me to Toothless. Thuggory got passed me and Dagur held me with a knife at my neck, and Thuggory drove his sword through Toothless's chest.

I looked over Toothless's bed and saw him still sleeping and unharmed. I heaved a sigh of relief. I looked through the window and saw that it was early morning. Without a doubt, Fishlegs was already at the forge working with the Gronckle Iron. I let Toothless sleep

and went to the forge. Sure enough, Fishlegs was at the forge and meeting everyone's demands.

"Hiccup, Oh I uh, I didn't, well that is to say I kind of did but I just didn'tâ€¦" He said fumbling with his words.

"It's alright Fishlegs I know what you're trying to say. I thought you and Gobber could use some help." I said putting on my apron and pulling my hair back.

"Thank you." He said blushing heavily. "Oh by the way, I like your ankle charm, where did you get it?"

"It was my mother's, my Dad found it in some of her old things and gave it to me." I said helping Gobber heat up the fire pit.

"Well, it's beautiful. You know I have some hot Gronckle Iron set aside for you so you can work on your shield." He said rubbing his neck awkwardly. "I thought you might want to get some ahead of time besides Gobber and I can handle the demands, you should get your shield taken care of."

"Wow, thanks." I said looking and seeing Meatlug let out a blast toward my work space. I got to work molding the Gronckle Iron into plates and binds I needed and within a few hours, I had my shield completed.

"This Gronckle Iron is going to do wonders for my shield." I said testing it.

I was right, the Gronckle Iron made it lighter than it was before. I could only imagine how strong it was now.

"I know right. How great is this stuff?" Fishlegs said excitedly.

I was proud of him but one thing was still puzzling me. How was Meatlug able to produce Gronckle Iron in the first place?

"So what kind of rocks did you feed her?" I asked him.

"Actually, I can't tell you." Fishlegs said awkwardly.

I got the sense that he couldn't tell because he didn't know but I could tell he was too embarrassed to say as much. So I didn't push the issue. Astrid landed in on Stormfly and came running in.

"Hiccup, the sentries say they saw another boat, we need to go now."

I ran outside, "You coming Fishlegs?" I asked.

"Love to Hiccup, but as you can see Meatlug and I are pretty busy."

I could see that I wasn't going to change his mind so I changed into my dragon form and joined Astrid and Toothless with the others to search for the Outcast boat. The whole thing was a complete waste of time and I said as much when we got back to the Academy.

We kept talking about how we needed Fishlegs much to Snotlout's dismay. He then tried to pin the blame on me though I didn't object because maybe he was right. Fishlegs was my friend and I left him behind the other day.

When we got to the forge I could see Fishlegs was under a lot of stress and it didn't help when I called for him to get his attention and everyone was chanting in anger. Suddenly Meatlug burst from the forge and started running through the village attracting metal from all over the village. I changed and followed her with Toothless close behind. I changed midair and landed in the saddle.

"Hiccup, you have to help Meatlug!" Fishlegs called after me.

"What's wrong with her?"

"I don't know, she's attracting metal, she's really scared."

"Okay, Snotlout, we need to herd her away from town." I called to my cousin.

"On it!"

Unfortunately, he did herd her but he fell off of Hookfang and I had to get her out. Toothless and I followed her through the forest and stopped her at a ledge over-looking the ocean.

"Hey girl, it's me remember me, your old pal Hiccup. Nothing to be afraid of." I said softly and calmly hoping to calm her down enough for me to get close to her. "We're gonna figure this out, but you have to stay still."

"Hiccup!" Fishlegs tried calling to me out of breath.

"Not now Fishlegs."

"NO you, you don't understand." He said trying to breathe.

"Not now Fishlegs." I said more forcefully.

"It's metal!" my leg was pulled out from under me. "charm."

I was pulled back toward Meatlug. "Oh, right." Suddenly she took off out of fright.

"Wait, where are you going?" Fishlegs called out to me.

"Absolutely no idea!" I called back.

If I changed now, I would hurt Meatlug and I wasn't strong enough to carry her back to the island and there is now way I'd forgive myself if she drowned at sea. So all I could do was dangle like a fish on a hook.

In almost no time at all, Fishlegs was in front of me on Toothless's back.

"Hey." I said casually.

"Hey." He said back.

"How's it going?"

"Better than expected."

"Yeah, so this might be a bad time, but I just wanted to say I'm sorry for leaving you behind the other day."

"Hiccupâ€|"

"I know you volunteered but still I should haveâ€|"

"Hiccup, I'm trying to concentrate."

"Oh, sorry." I said but then something caught my eye.  
"Wait!"

"Seriously, can we talk about our feelings later?"

"No, look." I said pointing in the direction I was looking.

It was an Outcast ship and it was heading out to sea.

"They're getting ready to fire." Fishlegs said sounding scared.

"I know. I have an idea." I looked up at Meatlug. "Dive!" I instructed.

It was more like a drop but I would take what I could get. She and I flew passed the ship and the weapons and catapults were all being pulled overboard.

"Excellent!" I cried but my victory was short lived because the smaller weapons acme flying toward me and Meatlug. "Not so excellent." I groaned.

"Hang on!" Fishlegs said as he flew up under me and Meatlug.

He tickled her stomach and the metal began to drop. Fishlegs reached up to catch me but I landed on Toothless's back. Fishlegs jumped onto Meatlug's back.

"Ah, much better." He sighed.

We looked back and watched the metal and rocks break through the deck of the Outcast ship and the ship sink. We couldn't help but laugh. We flew back to Berk and everyone was settling down after the experience with the metal attraction thing. I went home and took off the charm and my boot and looked at my leg. It was a little bruised and swollen but I could still walk and that's what mattered.

Toothless looked at my leg and looked at me with worried saddened eyes.

"It's alright love, it doesn't hurt much. I can still walk and the swelling will go down soon. There's nothing to worry about." I said stroking his head.

He nuzzled closer to me. I wrapped my arms around his neck and hugged



him close. I could feel he was upset I was hurt, but there wasn't a lot I could do about it, Toothless was Toothless and he worried about me more than my Dad did and that was saying something. After I let go I told him I was going to go patrol for a while. He flew out the window with me.

"Race you through the sea stacks?" he offered in his attempt to calm himself.

I smiled and accepted. We raced until the sun started to set. It was a close race and I could see Toothless was calming down when he said he would beat me next time.

I couldn't help but laugh. When we got home, Toothless and I shared a basket of cod together and we settled down upstairs.

"Good night my little accident attracter." He laughed.

"Love you." I cooed.

I settled down on my bed and fell into a blissful sleep. It had been a long day.

## 68. Chapter 68

### Chapter 68

(a month later)

I couldn't believe it, it was Hiccup's birthday again but she didn't look all that excited about it. I couldn't blame her, not after what happened last year. But not this year, I was going to make sure she had the best birthday, even if it killed me.

I woke up early and gathered all the other dragons in the Academy.

"I suppose you are all wondering why I gathered you here." I said once everyone was present.

"Yes, what's this about?" The flame one called Hookfang asked rather gruffly.

"Calm down Hookfang. It must be important otherwise the Dark One wouldn't have called us here." The Spined One called Stormfly reprimanded.

"I know this is going to sound unimportant to the rest of you but it's my mate's seventeenth birthday today and â€¦"

"And you're worried about how this year will turn out." The Bulbous One called Meatlug finished.

"Yeah, but most of all I'm worried that this year out of fear of what happened last year, she won't want to celebrate this year."

"We all know what happened last year, our riders wouldn't stop talking about it for days. And we are very sorry for what happened to her." Stormfly said in a condoling voice.

"It's not any one's fault. All I am asking this year is that you help me make sure that she has an amazing birthday this year." I asked almost pleadingly.

"We will do our best." The Twin-headed One called Barf and Belch replied together. They may not be the rock in the gorge but they were still loyal to a fault.

"Thank you. Just make sure that nothing happens to sully this day, I want her to be happy and nothing must go wrong, got it." I instructed.

"Got it!" They replied in unison.

We all flew back to our homes and settled down before our riders could wake up. Everything was falling into place. Today would be Hiccup's best birthday or name wouldn't be Toothless. I would do anything for my mate, it's like they say, everyone does crazy things, when they're in love.

\*\*I know this is really short but I just need to set the light on what you all will anticipate will happen this year, good or bad. I promise I will update as soon as I can after this. Again sorry for this really short chapter. I will make up to you all in the next one which will be longer I swear. agdoll95\*\*

## 69. Chapter 69

### Chapter 69

I opened my eyes and Toothless was gone. It did surprise me but for some reason I didn't get that unsettling feeling I get when Toothless is in trouble. I got out of bed and went outside. Then things got weird. I only took three steps out of the house then Stormfly herded me back inside.

I was puzzled but I could tell she wasn't going to let me out easily. I changed into my dragon form and went out the window. This time I was herded back in by Hookfang.

"Okay if this isn't weird I don't know what is." I said to myself. "What is going on?" I called through the walls.

"If we could tell you we would but we can't so we won't." Hookfang answered in his usually smug attitude.

Now I wasn't only feeling weirded out, now I was feeling irritated. First Toothless is gone when I wake up, then the dragons won't let me out of the house. Just what in the name of Thor was going on?

I paced back and forth through the house for what felt like hours. When the door finally opened, Toothless walked in.

"Where have you been love?" I asked feeling annoyed and relieved.

"I'll explain everything outside, but first you have to close your eyes."

I raised my brow in confusion.

"It's a surprise." He explained.

Doing what he asked, I closed my eyes and he guided me out of the house and into what I believed to be the plaza.

"Can I open them?"

"No, not yet. Wait here." He asked. I heard him walk a short distance away and sound out some call I had yet to hear him use.

"Now can I open them?" I asked feeling a little antsy.

"Now." He breathed.

I opened my eyes and it was like I was seeing Berk for the first time. I couldn't believe my eyes, all the houses, the shops, they were all decorated with roses, lilies, and all kinds of flowers. The lanterns glowed like stars on each house.

"Look up." Toothless said.

I looked up and I just couldn't put it into words. The dragons were flying through the air glowing with smaller lanterns on them. The patterns the lights made, it was breath taking. The show the other dragons gave was so beautiful I began to feel the tears in my eyes. To see the dragons dancing through the air coated in lights through the night sky, it was the most beautiful thing I had seen in a long time.

"Are you alright love?" Toothless asked seeing my tears.

"I'm fine, it's just it's all so beautiful I couldn't help it." I explained wiping them away.

Everyone in the village came out doing something that I hadn't heard them do in a long time. They were singing, singing just like they had always done before Mom died.

"You did all this for me?" I said with tears still flowing out of my eyes.

"I wanted you to have the best birthday after what happened last year. I wanted you to be happy."

"I am happy, as long as you and I are together, I am always happy." I said nudging his head and wrapping my neck around his in a hug.

He returned the gesture and we remained that way for a while. When we finally broke apart, the singing had stopped and all the other dragons landed.

"Happy Birthday Hiccup, my love."

"Thank you, thank you all." I called out to everyone even though not all of them could understand me, they understood me.

This really had been the best birthday and I wouldn't have traded it

for anything else in the world. The one I loved most in my life had spent all day preparing this for me and now I was sharing it with him. I wanted it to last forever, but unfortunately, time moved on and eventually, it got late and everyone went home. Toothless and I went for a flight around the island and raced through the sea stacks. We landed in the cove and snuggled close.

"Thank you Toothless, not just for this amazing birthday, but for everything. In a way, maybe me shooting you down three years ago was a good thing." I said resting against his shoulder.

"Yes, it's funny but at the time I didn't think about what I wanted to do with my life under the service of the Red Death. But now with you, I can't imagine my life without you." He said leaning into me.

We stayed like that for a while and then returned home. I changed back into my human form and then got ready for bed. Before laying down, I bent down to Toothless and kissed him on the snout.

"Thank you Love." I said laying down and going to sleep. For the first time in a long time, I fell asleep peacefully, like I was being wrapped in his warm embrace again.

## 70. Chapter 70

### Chapter 70

( a year and three months later)

"My love!" I called out to her.

I flew down to catch her. She looked like she was in a lot of pain. I caught her and landed as gently as I could and let her down to the ground slowly.

"Are you alright?" I asked my voice heavy with concern.

"I think so." She said through gritted teeth.

I was very worried. Ever since the village sage told us that she was pregnant, it had become more and more dangerous for us to be flying. I used a small spell that would allow her to talk to me even in her human form because it was too dangerous for her to change back and forth between forms. There was no telling what would happen to our unborn baby if she kept changing. So until the baby was born, she was restricted to her human form.

"We should head back to the village, you probably need to rest for a while." I said gesturing for her to climb on my back.

"You're probably right." She said gritting her teeth and grabbing the saddle. "Hurry." She groaned.

I took off as gently and quickly as I could. I wasn't going to fail again, this time I was going to do anything to keep my mate and my new unborn child safe. When we arrived in the village, I flew in straight through the window. I guided her to her bed and helped her down.

"The baby is getting pretty restless. Even at two months he is proving to be a handful." She said almost in a giggle.

"You really think it will a boy?" I said trying to have the same humor.

"I really don't know, but I'm just hoping that whether it's a boy or a girl they will be just like their father." She said rubbing her stomach to try and calm the baby down.

"And I'm hoping that they will be just as beautiful as you." I said rubbing my head against hers.

She reached up and touched my head but then cringed again when she felt the baby kick again. I nudged her stomach and then she settled down.

"I cause all the baby wanted was to feel their daddy." She said with a smile. "Why wouldn't you?" she said smiling down at her slightly bulging stomach.

"Or maybe they're just happy to hear your voice." I laughed with her.

"Or maybe both." She laughed back rubbing my face.

I nudged her stomach again and she started humming the same tune her own mother would sing to her. When her father came up he was a little restless.

"Is everything alright Hiccup."

"It's fine Dad, just the baby kicking." She giggled calming her father's nerves.

"I never would have guessed in all my years that my grandchild would be the child would be the offspring of a dragon." He chuckled his eyes beaming with pride. "Well, one thing does come to mind about the benefits of this."

"What?"

"We know that they will be more than capable of ruling this village when they are older." He chuckled. "If they are anything like you and Toothless, the village will always be protected." He said rubbing her stomach.

"Yeah, yeah they will." Hiccup beamed.

I felt a sense of overwhelming pride burn in my chest. My mate was the future ruler of the village and my children would be next in line. I never would have guessed that my children would be royal, let alone half human. But all the same, whether they were half human royalty or not, they were my family and I was never going to lose them. I would protect them no matter what.

A week passed and the baby settled down and Hiccup and I could fly a little longer but I still had to be gentle on takeoffs and landings. It wasn't as fun as free flying but it was for the sake of keeping my

mate and child safe. It wouldn't be much longer, once the baby was born, we could free fly again and when the child was old enough we could all fly through the open sky together.

One day, about three months after we found out Hiccup was pregnant, we had another visit from the Meathead tribe, this time Thuggory was with them. I could sense Hiccup's uneasiness about seeing him again after what he had done two years prior.

"Don't worry, I will be with you the entire time and he tries anything, I will kill him." I said standing close to her.

"That's not the only thing that's worrying me. If they see I am pregnant, how am I going to tell them that my child's father is a dragon?" she asked her hands shaking.

"If they notice we will make it through it like we always do. I will always protect you and our child no matter what." I said nudging her closer with my tail.

Maggadon approached Stoick and they exchanged their same warm heartily greeting. Thuggory was close by being escorted my guards.

"Hiccup, good to see you're in good health. Again I am truly sorry for what Thuggory did last time, but I promise that he will be closely watched this time. So you and your father can breathe easy this time." He said warmly a strong pat on her shoulder that made her stumble for a second.

"Thank you." She said rubbing her shoulder.

"Well, shall we get down to business?" Stoick asked guiding Maggadon and the rest to the Great Hall. "Hiccup as you will becoming chief soon I think you should join us for this."

"Of course." She said walking close to her father. "Dad, should Toothless come too? I mean he is the dragon of a future chief after all." Hiccup asked her father shifting her eyes to me.

I grabbed her true meaning. She was asking for me to come not only to make sure Thuggory kept his distance but also as her mate, I would also someday be ruling the village alongside her. Not keep the villagers in line, that would be her position, but to keep the dragons in line.

She may be half dragon but the dragons would listen better to one of their own kind just as the humans would listen better to some one of their own kind.

"Of course." Stoick said gesturing for us to follow.

Hiccup and I walked a short distance behind the men trying to hide her belly. She was right we couldn't we let the Meatheads know she was pregnant with my child. If they knew, I didn't even want to think about it. The village may have excepted the fact that she and I were mates and expecting a child anytime soon, but we didn't know how the Meathead tribe would react if they found out.

When we got to the Great Hall, I helped Hiccup sit down. Normally it

wouldn't be a hassle for her at three months pregnant, if she were pregnant with a human child, but she was pregnant with a dragon's child so there was no telling how long she would be pregnant and right now the baby was being restless.

"That dragon of your daughter's sure is tame. I have never seen a dragon help anyone sit down. Is she alright? She seems to be getting some mass on her." Maggadon asked taking his seat. I felt Hiccup's heart miss a beat. What could she say?

"She's fine, she's finally getting some meat on those bones." Her father said with a straight face.

Hiccup and I sighed silently in relief. With that explanation the Meatheads wouldn't know the difference if whether or not she was pregnant.

"Good to hear. She is going to be in charge of the village one day, it's a good idea to start building up on some iron." Maggadon said laughing heartedly.

Good thing Maggadon bought it, but one look at Thuggory told me that he was unsure whether or not to believe it and that he was going to find out what was really going on. I wasn't going to let him anywhere near Hiccup. If I had to I would carry Hiccup far away from the island to keep her safe from that beast. She was my mate and he had hurt her once and I was not going to let him do it again. Hiccup was my mate and right now she was carrying my child and I wasn't going to let anything happen to them. They were my family and I was ready to do anything to keep them safe.

## 71. Chapter 71

### Chapter 71

It took a few hours but my tribe and the Meatheads settled on our trading agreement for the next couple of years. After it was over, I told Dad that Toothless and I would be out flying for a couple of hours for some exercise. Dad got the message and allowed me and Toothless to leave. Toothless and I worked on our weaving in and out of the of the sea stacks. We had to be faster and better at it if we were going to keep any of steps ahead of the Screaming Death. That thing was getting faster and if we couldn't be faster we would be killed and with our child on the way, we had to be faster and stronger to protect our child as well as the village.

We kept going until I felt the baby kick again and then we headed back to the village. Toothless flew us home and then in through our bedroom window. After I settled down in bed, Toothless nuzzled my stomach and started cooing again at our restless child.

"At least we know that he'll be like you, restless and full of energy." I giggled rubbing my stomach trying to calm my baby down.

"And in other ways, like you, loving and compassionate." He replied looking at me with his eyes beaming.

At that point, the door opened and at first I thought it was Dad, but

no, it was the one person I really didn't want to see.

"Thuggory, what are you doing here? And how did you get away from your escorts?" I asked feeling very nervous.

"I gave them slip while we were on the tour with your Dad in the plaza." He said smugly.

"You know you're going to get in trouble, my Dad said for you to stay away from me." I said getting up and hiding behind Toothless.

"I know, but he can't keep us apart, you and I were made for each other." He said trying to come closer.

I gagged, but this time it wasn't morning sickness, it was the thought of me being Thuggory's soul mate. Toothless began to growl and nudged me toward the window. I started to climb, but I felt Thuggory grab my ankle. I tried to kick him off, but he was too strong. Thankfully, Toothless knocked him away and that gave me the chance to jump out the window and to make a run for it.

I ran to find my father and Maggadon. As I ran, I could feel the baby start to kick again. I could tell this time the baby was scared and so was I, but I had to keep running to find my Dad and Maggadon to stop Thuggory. I most definitely did not want to repeat my sixteenth birthday when they last visited.

"It's alright baby, Just settle down long enough for me grandfather and everything will be alright." I whispered to my baby inside me.

The baby must have heard me because I could feel him settle down. I kept on running. If I had been still fully human, I would have run out of energy and breathe by now. But thanks to my dragon half, I kept on running through the plaza asking any and every one if they had seen my Dad. All the people who had seen them sent me all over the village, until finally, I saw them heading back up to the Great Hall. I started to run up to meet them when I felt someone grab me and start to drag me behind a house.

When I could see who it was my heart started racing again, this time out of fear. Thuggory had gotten passed Toothless. I was fighting for him to let me go, but he was stronger than last time and this time I didn't see myself getting out of this so easily.

"So now tell me Hiccup, who's the father?" he asked making my heart miss a beat. "My father may buy that you're just building up iron but I'm not that stupid. I know your pregnant and I don't like it." He growled in my ears.

I held my tongue. There was no way in this or any life time that I would ever tell anybody about me and Toothless if they only meant to hurt us. A full minute passed and he then began to punch me in the stomach. I crumpled to the ground and folded myself up to protect my baby. Before he could kick me, someone grabbed him and pulled him away from me, then I felt someone else help me to my feet. When I opened my eyes, I saw Maggadon holding his son back and I looked up and saw my Dad holding me up and the I saw Toothless running over to me looking very worried.



"Maggadon, I thought I told you to keep your son away from my daughter." Dad said angrily.

"I know and I am sincerely sorry Stoick. I can see now that the only way I am ever going to be able to do that is to leave on Meathead Island. I promise, he will never set foot on this island again." Maggadon swore raising his right hand.

"Good, now get him off my island." Dad said pointing to the docks.

Maggadon and Thuggory's 'escorts' made their way there with Thuggory obviously putting up a fight. Once they were out of sight, Dad and Toothless helped into the house.

"Hiccup, are you alright?" Dad asked helping me lay down.

"I'm fine, all I'm worried about is my baby, Thuggory hit me pretty hard." I said rubbing my stomach.

Toothless nudged me and looked like he was focusing, trying to sense the tiny life growing inside me. "I can still sense heartbeat inside, the baby's safe, you protected her well." He said reassuring me.

I heaved a sigh of relief. Dad, who couldn't understand anything, got the message. "I'm sorry lass. I should have known that Thuggory was going to pull something like this. Next time, you and Toothless can leave the island until the Meatheads are gone." He said rubbing his head. "Right now I think you should get some rest, you took quite a beating today."

I nodded in agreement and closed my eyes trying to fall asleep. I could hear Toothless settling down on his own bed. As much as I wanted to snuggle with him, I had to relax and let the baby rest.

'Next time.' I thought to myself.

## 72. Chapter 72

### Chapter 72

(five months later)

I was by her bed trying to console her, it was clear to anyone who was within ear shot that she was in a lot of pain. Her screams were earsplitting.

"Just hang in there love." I said soothing her as she gasped and huffed in a heavy sweat.

"It hurts." She cringed squeezing her father's hand.

"It's alright lass, just one more big push. You're almost there." He said seething in her grip.

"Come on Love, just push." I said talking to her as she continued to gasp and heave heavy breathes.

"I can see a head." Gobber said from the front of the bed. "Just one more push. On three."

"One." Gobber said readying for the baby.

"Two." Stoick said readying Hiccup to push.

"Three." I said helping her ready.

She screamed and pushed as hard as she could. Her scream made my ears cringe, it hurt, but I was not going to back down now. Our baby was almost here and I needed to be here. With another push, our baby was free from her womb and was crying loud and strong for all to hear.

"It's a boy." Gobber said wiping off the blood and wrapping the tiny newborn in a blanket and handing him to Hiccup.

The look in her eyes had changed from pain to pure joy and pride. I looked at the tiny new life in my mate's arms. I couldn't contain the joy I felt seeing my new son in my mate's arms. He looked just like his mother. Auburn hair, thin and beautiful. I just looked at him and then at my mate who looked like she couldn't put into words the happiness she felt. Suddenly she cried out in pain and Stoick took the baby out of her arms.

"What's wrong?" I asked in worry.

"I don't know, it feels like there's still something in me and it's trying to come out." She said cringing in pain.

Gobber took another look. "I'm seeing another head, there's another baby."

"What!" We all said in shock.

"Alright Hiccup, I need you to push, you can do it." Gobber said readying for the baby.

"Come on love, just one more push and you will bring our new baby into the world." I said encouraging her.

She pushed and then we heard another baby crying. "It's a girl." Gobber said wrapping her in another blanket.

Stoick and Gobber handed her both of our children. Our new daughter looked like her but at the same time she looked just like me. Pitch black hair, toxic green eyes and dark fingernails that I thought without a shadow of a doubt that would prove to be claws when she would grow up a little.

It seemed to be the end of it. Hours went by and no other babies came through. So it seemed we had only two of the most beautiful children any parent could ask for.

"What should we name them?" Hiccup asked me catching her breathe while her father and Gobber cleaned up.

"I don't know." I said, I just could take my eyes off of them. They were here, my children, I just couldn't think of what to name

them.

"How about we name them after your parents?" she offered.

I looked at her and could only nod. Our daughter, Keena and our son, Keir. I could not put into words how happy I felt, and I imagined Hiccup felt the same way. All we could do was watch the tiny newborns in their mother's arms sleeping and clinging to her so strongly. I didn't want this moment to end, I wouldn't trade for anything in the world.

## 73. Chapter 73

### Chapter 73

(five years later)

My head felt like it was about to explode. After my Dad handed down the position of chief to me, and handed over leadership of the Dragon Academy to Astrid, things had gotten harder to control. Especially with my son and daughter running around the village.

Today, Toothless and I were searching for them. They told us that they were just playing hide and seek, but it had already been four hours and now we had the village and the Academy out searching for them.

"Don't worry lass, we'll find them." Dad reassured me.

I wanted to believe him, but as a mother, all I could do was worry. Keir and Keena had just turned five and now they were proving to be more of a hand full than they did when they were just babies. When it started to get dark, everyone without a dragon went home and I changed into my dragon form and Toothless and I spent the next couple of hours searching for them.

"Who knew two little children could cause so much trouble." Toothless said trying to lighten my mood, but all my thoughts were on trying to find our children.

"I think it's time we use our echolocations." I said scanning the forest.

"I think so too, but we will have to use them one at a time. Using them both at once won't be as effective because the sounds will mix and cause serious confusion." Toothless instructed.

Toothless sent out his sound blast and nothing, I sent mine and nothing. We kept it up for few more hours but we still could get any sign of Keir or Keena anywhere in the forest.

"Hiccup, we have to go back. I know you're worried, but bare in mind they have your blood and mine flowing in their veins. If anything happens, they can change into Dark Ones and defend themselves." Toothless said trying to get me to turn around. I didn't listen, I was too focused on trying to find my children. "Look, you go home and get some rest, I'll keep looking." He said getting in front of me.

"Alright, but promise me you'll find them." I pleaded.

"Since when have I ever let anyone I hold close to go willingly? I promise, they'll come home with me."

With that I nudged his head in a hug and turned around home. I couldn't stop thinking about all the kinds of trouble Keir and Keena could get themselves in. They were only five years old but they seemed to get themselves in and out of trouble easier than the twins.

When I reached the house I changed into my human form and walked into house. Out of nowhere I was tackled by two little beings. It was Keir and Keena, they had been here the entire time.

"How long have you two been home? Do you know how worried your father and I have been?" I scolded them.

"We found them in the forge in your old work place. We brought them home and were about to go out and tell you that they were home." My Dad explained coming out.

"We were just playing Momma." Keir said hugging me.

"We didn't mean to make you sad." Keena said hugging me too.

"It's alright little ones, but right now I need to go out again and find your father, he's still out looking for you two." I said getting up. "You please stay here and don't get into trouble." I said rubbing their heads before taking off.

I ran deeper and deeper into the woods. Finally, I used my dragon call hoping Toothless heard it. Seconds later, he called back and was right beside me. The look in his eyes told me that he was expecting me to explain why I wasn't at home.

"Look, I know you told me to go home, but I had to find you to tell you that Keir and Keena are at home. They had been hiding in the forge the entire time." I said finally feeling a sense of relief.

He turned and gestured for me to get into the saddle. I climbed in and it was then I realized why he wanted me to go home so badly, I was feeling very tired and the excitement of trying to find my children was running my senses away from the fact I might need sleep. Unlike Toothless, I couldn't stay up for days at a time without losing my mind and risking becoming sick. That's why he always made sure I got to sleep every night, or at least every night that didn't have situations that made it impossible to sleep.

Toothless and I flew at a steady pace back to the house. From the position of the moon, it was almost midnight. Toothless landed outside the front door and as soon as the door open, two little Night Furies tackled Toothless. I knew who it was, Keir and Keena. From when they were just infants they had been changing into Night Furies, at first at random times, but by the time they were three they had it under control, they could change at will.

Both Toothless and I were very proud of them for that, although at times, they seemed to enjoy it too much. No matter how many times we told them that they were to keep their abilities hidden unless

necessary from anyone who was not from the village, they just seemed to not listen half the time. But then again, they were only five years old and were still learning about the world around them. Regardless, Toothless and I loved them more than life itself.

Once we got Keir and Keena off Toothless and got them to settle down, we brought them upstairs to our room and laid them down to bed. Toothless and I then laid down in our own bed.

"Well this was an exciting day." I said sarcastically.

"Yeah. Who knew that two little half dragons could cause so much trouble just playing hide and seek." Toothless chuckled.

I yawned and snuggled closer to my mate. It may have been a long day, but every night I always looked forward to spending the night with the one I loved. My eyes closed slowly and Toothless wrapped his wing around me and hummed the tune he always did to get me to go to sleep. I was always more than happy to have this time with Toothless, I wouldn't trade these times for anything.

## 74. Chapter 74

### Chapter 74

"Are you kidding me?" I heard Hiccup cry out downstairs.

I made my way down to see if she was alright. She was talking with her father and from the sound of it she wasn't happy about something.

"I'm afraid not Hiccup. Thuggory has asked for your hand in marriage and as he is now the chief of the Meathead tribe he is free to choose who he wants to marry." Stoick said gravely.

"Well that's just great, my first business with another tribe as chief and I have to turn down a marriage proposal.

"I told you there is nothing easy about being chief of the village."

"I never said it was but given the choice of turning down Thuggory or facing the Screaming Death, I'd pick the Screaming Death." Hiccup sighed slumping into her chair. "You know what Thuggory's like, I turn him down and who knows what he'll do to have me. I can already see him declaring war on our tribe just because I refused to marry him."

"Well what are you going to do?" Stoick asked her.

"I'm gonna do what I should have done a long time ago, I'm gonna tell him the truth, about me and Toothless." Hiccup said massaging her temples.

"You really think that's a good idea." Astrid said walking in.

"It may be the only way I can get him to leave me alone. At least if I tell him the truth I won't have to find my dragon form from him and I can fight back if he attacks."

"Well I know you have a lot to worry about right now, so I imagine you're not going to like this, but we've been having problems with the riders at the academy. Some of the trainees can't keep their dragons under control and I think they've been taking too many Snotlout lessons."

"Great, just great." She groaned. I nudged her arm and she rubbed my head. "Well, first things first, I guess I should talk with the new trainees and see what I can do about them. I will deal with Thuggory when he gets here." Hiccup said getting up. "Toothless, you keep an eye on Keir and Keena and make sure they don't get into trouble." She said turning to me.

I nodded in acknowledgement and went back upstairs. Thank Draconic that they were still asleep. When they're awake, they are quite wild. But what can you expect from two young half dragons.

I was snapped from my thoughts when I heard them stir and start to wake up.

"Daddy!" they cried all at once and tackling me in their dragon forms.

I had to wrestle them for a minute to get them to settle down long enough to talk to them.

"Alright, what do you say we go out and practice your flying?" I offered them.

As I could expect from them they were excited. I allowed them to climb on my back as I flew out the window making our way toward Dragon Island. At least if we trained there, Hiccup wouldn't have to worry about them causing problems in the village. The journey went by fast but training was longer than what I thought it would be.

The two of them were great students, but they were easily distracted but they learned quickly so maybe they deserved a little play time. By the time we had to head home, Keir and Keena had worn themselves out playing. At least it would be easier to get them to go to bed tonight. They slowly crawled onto my back and we made our way back to Berk.

When we got back, it wasn't a sight I thought I would see. Hiccup was locked in battle with Thuggory while Astrid and the other dragon riders were dealing with the soldiers. I suddenly felt stupid bringing the kids back but I had to help Hiccup and Stoick defend our home.

I brought the kids back to the house and told them to stay inside. I then flew out and caught up and knocked Thuggory out of the way.

"Toothless, when did you get back? Where are Keir and Keena?" She asked blocking a sword about to come down on her.

"They're in the house, they'll be alright as long as they stay put." I said pushing her out of the way of a axe that came flying at her. "What happened?"

"I'll tell you after we get these Meatheads off our island." She said knocking a way a rushing soldier.

The battle went on for what felt like forever. Suddenly we heard Thuggory on the ledge outside our house.

"You can't refuse me forever Hiccup. And I have the very reason why right here." He said cockily as he revealed two of his men had our children. "I'll give you a choice Hiccup, you can be mine or you can watch your children die." He sneered holding a knife at Keena's throat. "We'll be taking our leave now. If see any dragons following these ill bred urchins taste steel." He threatened heading back toward the docks.

Hiccup and I could only watch in anger and horror. "I will kill him." Hiccup growled her eyes narrowing to near invisible slits.

"We'll get them back, but rushing after him like this will only put Keir and Kenna at risk." I said trying to get her to come to her senses. "Losing control now won't help them or you."

"What are we going to do now?" she said looking at me with sheer horror written in her eyes.

"I swear on my life and on Draconic himself that we will get our children back. And we will do it the way we always have. With tactful thinking and careful planning. I know you are better at that batter than anything, but you need to calm down." I said nudging her head.

She changed back into her human form and went to the house. She didn't say a word the rest of the night, I knew she wasn't in the mood to talk so I didn't push her. News of our children's kidnapping spread like wild fire throughout the village. All the villagers came offering their condolences and food but Hiccup didn't seem t have any interest in any of it. She was too busy coming up with ways we could get our children back.

Finally, the visitors stopped coming and I convinced Hiccup to get some rest. I myself had a hard time falling asleep. Like Hiccup I was furious about what Thuggory had done, but going ballistic wasn't going to get them back. I knew Hiccup would find a way to get them back, we just had to wait and see what Thuggory had planned next. I still found it hard to sleep, but eventually I fell into an uneasy sleep. All that night I just kept having nightmares about losing the ones I cared about most in my life. I don't think I have ever had a longer night in my life.

## 75. Chapter 75

I will bringing this story to an end soon. I am running out of ideas and I think I have dragged in on for long enough. I had fun writing this story and I am grateful for all your support through out the creation of this story. Thank you. I will have more Fanfics uploaded soon. C u all l8r. agdoll95

## 76. Chapter 76

## Chapter 75

I woke up very sore and very tired. I hadn't slept well at all, all the nightmares and the idea of Keir and Keena being held hostage. It was just too much, but we were going to get them back today no matter what it took.

I got up and went down stairs quietly not to wake up Stoick or Gobber. I looked up stairs and saw Hiccup still in an uneasy rest. At least she went to sleep. I needed some exercise to wake up. I walked outside and took off around the island. It really was beautiful to see the island in the early morning, but all I could think about was my son and daughter.

Were they safe and just what is it that Thuggory was thinking? How could he be so cruel to hold our children hostage just to marry someone who doesn't even love him? If he didn't have Keir and Keena with him I would have gone after him myself and killed him for threatening our children, but I couldn't just dive in there without putting Keir and Keena in even more danger. I had to be patient, Hiccup would think of something, she always did.

I flew back to the house and saw Hiccup getting dressed in the armor her father had made for her.

"Any sign of Thuggory?" she asked me.

I shook my head. Hiccup turned her head away and her body began to rack with silent sobs. I stood up and wrapped my arms and wings around her. She turned around hugged me back. I started to feel the tears running from her face down my belly.

"What kind of a mother am I?" she sobbed. "I let that beast take our children just because he thinks I love him." She said backing off rubbing her eyes.

I gently licked the tears away as she fell. Hiccup looked into my eyes and could see I was telling her that everything was going to be alright, that we would get them back and that Thuggory was going to pay for threatening the lives of the children of two of the most powerful dragons in the world.

Suddenly, there was a knock at the door. Astrid walked in with a look of surprise on her face. "You two might want to come see this." She said sounding completely shocked.

Hiccup and I flew to the docks to see the Meathead ships returning. When they made it close enough dock, Thuggory just came running off like Draconic was at his heels and we soon saw why. Keir and Keena were chasing him in their dragon forms. To them, they were just playing a game of hunting tag, a very rough but completely safe game young dragons play to sharpen their hunting skills.

"Please, just take them, I don't care who does just keep them away from." He pleaded grabbing Hiccup by her armored vest and crumpling down to his knees.

Hiccup nodded at me and I called the kids to me.

"Daddy, we're playing hunter, but the one playing the prey is no fun,



he's too easy." Keir said rubbing his head against mine.

"Yeah, can you play with us instead?" Keena pleaded to me with her toxic green eyes shining up at me.

"Of course, come on, let's let Mommy take care of her business here." I said allowing them to climb onto my back and taking off for the cove.

I heaved a sigh of relief, our children were back home safe and sound. And this time, both Hiccup and I were never going to let anything happen to them again.

## 77. Chapter 77

### Chapter 76

I watched as Toothless took off with the kids towards the cove. I then turned my attention back to Thuggory who was still crumpled in a heap in front of me.

"Why did you bring them back?" I said loosening his grip on my vest.

"Because they were driving me completely insane. All they ever did was either run around screaming or they would change into dragons and chase me like I was some kind of toy. There was just no stopping them, no matter what we did they just wouldn't settle down. I don't know how you and that Night Fury put up with them." He said in a fit like he was at his wits end.

I could hardly hold back the giggles that had formed in my throat. "Well, that is what our life has been like for the past five years after all. You just have to learn how to calm them down." I said still trying to hold back the giggles.

"Please, just never let them near me again. I won't bother you again I swear on my life and honor as I Viking that I will leave you and Berk in peace, just please never let those little monsters near me again." He pleaded grabbing my armor again.

"Alright, you've got a deal." I said bringing him to his feet and shaking his hand.

After I stopped, he jumped on his boat and started sailing away as fast as the winds would take him. As we watched them go, Astrid came and stood right by me.

"Who knew that not even Thuggory would be able to stand those two just for one day? We put up with the baby Thunderdrums longer than that." Astrid snickered.

"Yeah well, my kids aren't baby Thunderdrums, they're young half Night Furies and just bursting with energy. The only way we ever get them to settle down is if we allow them to play games and wear themselves out or we slip a little dragon nip in their food and they calm down long enough for us to get them either home or in bed." I laughed waving at the ships.

"Well, what are you going to do now?" Astrid asked me as I turned toward the village to get some work done.

"Well, with my children safe and occupied, maybe I can finally get some work done in the village." I answered walking up the ramps.

"Hiccup, Hoark said he saw the Lars and Lloyd rustling sheep form his farm again." Gobber informed me.

"I'm on my way." I said hurrying up the ramp.

"You gonna change into your dragon form, might be a little faster." Astrid asked.

"No, it's just Lars and Lloyd, there's no need to scar them for life." I said taking off.

Other than disciplining the twins' kids, all four of them, the rest of the day was pretty quiet. I spent a little Father/Daughter time with Dad fishing once everything quieted down in the village and then offered some assistance in the forge with Gobber before going home and helping Dad get dinner ready before Toothless came back with our exhausted children on his back.

"Wore them didn't ya?" I laughed.

He nodded and then took them upstairs and laid them down. I went up to join him and tucked our little ones in.

"Mommy, will you sing the good-night song for us?" Keena asked looking at me with tired eyes.

"Please." Keir asked as well.

"Alright." I said brushing their hair away from their eyes.

"Sun goes down and we are here together, fireflies glow like a thousand charms. Stay with me and you can dream forever right here in my arms tonight.

It's magic when you are here beside me. Close your eyes and let me hold you tight. Everything that I could ever need is right here in my arm tonight.

Sounds of day fade away, stars begin to climb, melodies fill the breeze, sweeter all the time. Sun goes down and we are here together, stay with me and you can dream forever right here in my arms tonight."

As I finished the song, I hugged my children as they drifted off to sleep. Toothless and I watched them for a while just thinking of how lucky we were to have such amazing children.

Toothless and I went down for dinner and it passed almost like there was someone wrapping their arms around us in a hug. Dad and I looked at each other and we knew we were thinking the same thing. We both felt it was Mom and we just enjoyed the feeling of here right there with us.

After dinner was finished and Dad and I cleaned up, Toothless and I went upstairs to bed. I changed into my dragon form and snuggled up close to him.

"I guess our children really grow up able to take care of themselves." I snickered looking at their snoozing forms in their bed.

"Yeah, and no matter how much time may pass, they will always be right here in our arms." Toothless said wrapping his winger tighter around me.

"Dreaming tonight and forever." I said rubbing my head against his.

"Now until the end of time." We said together enjoying our embrace and slowly lulling each other to sleep. It was a peaceful sleep and we enjoyed it together, just as we always would.

End  
file.